聖嚴研究第七輯

Studies of Master Sheng Yen Vol.7



二〇一六年一月

聖嚴研究

第七輯

目錄

Against Monisms	with	Dualistic	Consequences	反一	一元論的
二分法:					

The Importance of Shengyan's Critique of the Character and	
Teachings of Jesus Brook A. Zip	oryn 7
1. Introduction	10
2. Monism and Dualism in Shengyan's theory of Religion	13
3. Monism and Dualism in the Bible	15
4. The Rosetta Stone for Interpreting the Gospels	19
5. What is Commanded When "Love" is Commanded	25
6. The "Now-Versus-Then" Structure of Early Christian	
Eschatology as Ends-Means Relation Between Monism and	d
Dichotomy	31
7. General Proposition for Comparative Method	35
8. Importance of the Critique Specifically of Jesus	37
9. Alternatives to Monisms with Dualistic Consequences	42
Bibliography	49
中文摘要	50

語境傳承

——聖嚴法師的文字化禪修	李玉珍 53
一、前言	55
二、現代臺灣社會的禪修風尚	56
三、法鼓山禪堂的教育形式	61
四、傳統中國叢林的禪堂與修禪	68
五、聖嚴法師與法鼓山禪堂	79
六、聖嚴法師的語境傳承	82
七、結論	85
參考文獻	87
英文摘要	89
Analyzing the Rhetoric of "Education" in Sheng Yen's T	Γhought
Se	
Ser	th Clippard 91
	th Clippard 91
1. Introduction	th Clippard 91
1. Introduction	th Clippard 91 93 94 94
1. Introduction 2. Historical Context 3. Rhetoric of Education	th Clippard 91 93 94 99
1. Introduction 2. Historical Context 3. Rhetoric of Education 4. Sheng Yen and the rhetoric of transformation	th Clippard 91 93 94 99 111
1. Introduction 2. Historical Context 3. Rhetoric of Education 4. Sheng Yen and the rhetoric of transformation Bibliography	th Clippard 91 92 94 111 116
1. Introduction 2. Historical Context 3. Rhetoric of Education 4. Sheng Yen and the rhetoric of transformation Bibliography 中文摘要	th Clippard 91 92 111 116 119
1. Introduction 2. Historical Context 3. Rhetoric of Education 4. Sheng Yen and the rhetoric of transformation Bibliography 中文摘要	th Clippard 91

四、聖嚴法師的默照禪	149
五、默照禪與四念處	154
六、結論	167
參考文獻	
英文摘要	171
「心靈環保」組織	
——二十一世紀之「修行型組織」	釋果光 173
一、前言	175
二、參究「都監是誰?」	183
三、開創「修行型」組織	195
四、實踐「菩薩道」精神	210
五、結論	221
參考文獻	224
英文摘要	227
探索聖嚴法師傳法予居士的「演派名號」	
——從臨濟宗鼓山派的法脈傳承談起 釋果與、	林其賢 231
一、前言	233
二、臨濟演派·鼓山名號	234
三、剃法交錯・聖嚴傳承	242
四、法鼓禪門·演派名號	249
五、平等倫理·創造傳統	259
六、結語:宗教師的時代意義	270
參考文獻	273
英文摘要	277

數數念佛禪法之研究

—以聖嚴法師的教學為主	果鏡 279
一、前言	281
二、何謂「數數念佛」?	281
三、「數數念佛」即是禪法?	293
四、「數數念佛」與「十念記數」、「晨朝十念」之上	比較310
五、「話頭禪」、「默照禪」中的「數數念佛」	315
六、結語	319
參考文獻	321
英文摘要	325

Against Monisms with Dualistic Consequences 反一元論的二分法:

The Importance of Shengyan's Critique of the Character and Teachings of Jesus

Brook Ziporyn

Professor, The University of Chicago Divinity School, USA

Abstract

Master Shengyan's book Studies of Christianity, published in 1967, is a collection of essays on the Christian religion, written largely as a counterattack to Christian critiques of Buddhism. **1** In this paper I want to focus especially on Shengyan's critique of biblical religion from the ground up, which picks up and develops some of the themes already found in Master Yinshun's works on the same topic **2** and in the same historical context, but especially on the critique of the teachings and character of Jesus himself as depicted in the Gospels. It is currently unfashionable for religions to critique each other, preferring to stress commonalities and dialogue as roads toward harmony and peace, and indeed Buddhism has led the way in opening new paths for interreligious dialogue and tolerance, due partially perhaps to the resources of its traditions of the multiple expressions of truth in the Mahayana notion of upaya. But I want to suggest that Buddhism has also a unique role to play in the equally important critique of religion, and especially

[•] Shi Shengyan, Jidujiao zhiyanjiu (Taipei: Dongchu chubanshe, 1967).

⁹ See Shi Yinshun, *Wozhizongjiaoguan* (Hsinchu: Zhengwen chubanshe, 2000), "Shangdi ai shiren," and "Shangdi ai shiren dezaitaolun," pp. 179-216, 217-274.

of the monotheistic idea, which as its global expansion continues unabated threatens to absorb atheistic religious sentiment into itself, even under the aegis of ecumenical claims that all religions somehow teach the same truths and encourage the same morals: those truths and morals turn out more and more to be monotheistic truths and morals, and the precious inheritance of non-monotheist religion becomes harder and harder to discern. Of special importance here is the critique not only of the Old Testament God and classical theology—no brainers to many modern people, including Christians themselves, for whom these are already obviously antiquated and offensive—but more especially the critique of Jesus specifically. For Jesus is unthinkingly praised and accepted by many non-Christians, indeed by most of the world, both religious and non-religious, as some kind of sage and man of peace, as if he could be ranked next to figures like Confucius or the Buddha. Jesus is a hero in Christianity, Islam, Hinduism, Communism, much secular humanism, even some Jewish nationalism. Against this tendency, Shengyan's work coins the term "dichotomizing monism" 一元論的二分法 to identify a feature of monotheistic religious that is especially pronounced in Christianity, and makes clear that this is not a distortion of the teaching of Jesus as depicted in the Bible, but is the essence of Jesus' teaching. The key structural feature of this dichotomizing monism is that it combines two apparently sharply opposed tendencies: 1) the tendency toward inclusiveness, linked to histrionic gestures of self-sacrifice, as seen in the teaching of universal love, and 2) the tendency toward aggressive self-assertion and extreme exclusivity, linked to the fanatical demonization of one's ideological enemies. Jesus applies the inclusive, forgiving tendency, transcending the dichotomy between nationalities and between saint and sinner, only to Christians, i.e., only to those who accept his authority and pledge themselves to absolute obedience. This goes hand in hand with the opposite tendency, to demonize and condemn anyone who does not accept this condition of obedience, i.e, all non-Christians. Shengyan's work shows the inner connection between these two seemingly incompatible trends in the most basic premises of the gospel's religious vision, and how they necessarily go together on those premises. This structure of demonizing one's ideological enemies, pitting in-group against out-group, which was invented or perfected by the Jesus of the Gospels, remains influential and due to its association with Christian prestige has come to be defended as morally and spiritually desirable. It is arguably a structure that lives on and animates modern racism, fascism, and Bolshevism, all of which give all-inclusive affirmation with one hand while simultaneously building this in-group solidarity on the basis of a vociferous condemnation of an out-group, making the exclusivity morally appealing and palatable by linking it to the self-sacrificing ideology of in-group inclusivity—what we might call "Jesusism." Buddhism is one of the few remaining ideologies that can realistically and judiciously assess this sort of Jesusism and its continued influence on world culture, even in disguised forms, as the characteristic dichotomizing monism of these movements. In so doing, Buddhist thought provides one of the few remaining alternatives to this way of thinking.

Key words: Dualism, Monism, Christianity, Jesus, Gospels

1. Introduction

Master Shengyan's book *Studies of Christianity*, published in 1967, is a collection of essays on the Christian religion, written largely as a counterattack to Christian critiques of Buddhism. • In this paper, I want to highlight the importance of Shengvan's top-to-bottom critique of biblical religion, but especially of the critique of the teachings and character of Jesus himself as depicted in the Gospels. Singling these critiques out as especially valuable may be somewhat controversial. It is currently unfashionable for religions to critique each other, preferring to stress commonalities and dialogue as roads toward harmony and peace, and indeed Buddhism has often been seen to lead the way in opening new paths for interreligious dialogue and tolerance, possibly by making use of resources derived from its traditional conception of *upāya* ("skillful means"), which allows for multiple alternate, or even contradictory, expressions of truth. It may thus be felt that Buddhists, above all, should be exemplary in refraining from taking potshots at other religions. Conversely, it may be felt that inasmuch as Shengyan was himself a professional Buddhist, his critiques of a rival religion should be dismissed as self-serving sectarian marketing, attempting damage control against a competitor who was (and is) badly impinging on his market of believers. Against this, I want to suggest that Buddhist writers, whatever their motive, have a unique role to play in the equally important critique of what has in modern times come to be called "religion," and especially of the monotheistic idea which has become implicitly central to this conception. For as the global expansion of monotheism continues unabated, monotheist-centric conceptions of religion increasingly absorb atheistic religious sentiment, even under the aegis of questionable ecumenical claims that all religions somehow teach the same truths and encourage the same morals: at the end of the

"dialogue" those truths and morals turn out more and more to be monotheistic truths and morals, and the precious inheritance of non-monotheist religion becomes harder and harder to discern. The same is true for the academic study of religion, and indeed even of scholarly and social critiques of religion, which are primed to read the specific evils of monotheism as general traits of all the very disparate sets of practices and speculations, of all times and places, that have subsequently come to be called "religions." Against this, Buddhist critiques of monotheistic religion assume a special importance.

But this importance is particularly pronounced not for the critiques the Old Testament God and classical theology—nobrainers because already obviously antiquated and offensive to many modern people, including many nominal Christians themselves—but more especially for the critique of scriptural personage "Jesus" specifically. For Jesus is unthinkingly praised and approved of by many non-Christians, indeed by most of the world, both religious and non-religious—indeed, regarded as some kind of sage and man of peace, as if he could be ranked next to figures like Confucius or Socrates or the Buddha. Jesus is generally considered a hero and exemplar not only in all forms of Christianity, but also in Islam (as prophet), modern Hinduism (as avatar), in Communism (as rebel against the rich and privileged, class warrior and champion of the subaltern), and in much of liberal secular humanism (as all-around nice guy fighting outdated superstitions and rituals in favor of pure rational morals, highmindedness, tolerance and forgiveness). Indeed, the one tradition in which Jesus traditionally has not been a hero, Judaism, has in the past hundred or so years often seemingly come to integrate Jesus into general Jewish nationalism and ethnic pride, claiming Jesus as a Jewish culture hero in good standing, someone of whom the Jewish people should be proud, expressing the best of their national character and contribution to the world. It would seem that almost the only remaining places on earth where Jesus is not likely to be in some way revered are those few rare remaining patches of East

[•] Shi Shengyan, Jidujiao zhiyanjiu (Taipei: Dongchu chubanshe, 1967).

and Southeast Asia which are, almost miraculously, culturally and demographically both *non-Christian* and *non-post-Communist*. But such places are evaporating as quickly as the rain forests.

Against this tendency, Shengyan's work picks up and develops some of the themes already found in Master Yinshun's works on the same topic **2** written in the same historical context. Yinshun's analysis of biblical monotheism remains a classic, giving a definitive close-read of the Bible that reveals the key role of the "master-slave" relationship in the religious consciousness and ethics of the biblical monotheist. 3 Especially praiseworthy was Yinshun's insistence that this applied at least as much to the Jesus of the New Testament as to the Yahweh of the Old Testament. What Yinshun points out here, against those who see in Jesus a softening and humanizing, perhaps even an ethicizing or Buddhification, of the harsh dictatorial Old Testament judgegod, is that Jesus is equally dictatorial and equally harsh indeed, if closely read, perhaps even more so—and that the entire justification and structure of his teaching continues to rest squarely on the monotheistic master-slave relationship between God and humanity, where recognition of, submission to, and obedience to God's authority remains the ultimate criterion of goodness, and the sole legitimate determinant of one's prospects and standing in the universe. Yinshun emphasized the crucial point that the ethical teachings of both the Old and the New Testaments are incoherent without this premise. Shengyan's work builds on this insight, but helps to nuance it with a more comprehensive explanation of the implications of this master-slave relation, and how precisely it manifests in the two seemingly opposed forms in the Old Testament and New Testament. The key idea to Shengyan's analysis of monotheism lies in the term he coined for it: "a monism with dualistic consequences" 一元論的二分法.

2. Monism and Dualism in Shengyan's Theory of Religion

Shengyan starts with an overall theory about "the goal of religions" in general. He sees them as involved in seeking a liberation from some kind of "constraints" of present realities, often described in terms of "sin" or "karma." in order to advance to a state that is free of these constraints. Using traditional terms, he describes this generally as a process of advancing from the level of phenomena (現象 *xianxiang*) to an experience of the fundamental essence of things (本體 benti). But crucially, Shengvan gives these terms a very specific meaning, defining the process as "advancing from contradiction (矛盾 *maodun*) to unity (統一 tongvi)." **⑤** The constraints of the phenomenal world are thus identified with "contradiction." Contradiction is premised on the idea of multiple existent things or beings which are mutually exclusive to one another. So this term "contradiction" covers also, by implication, everything to do with multiplicity, conditionality, finitude, dualisms. This definition is thus extremely broad, taking in all aspects of experience that are premised on the assumption

⁹ See Shi Yinshun, *Wozhizongjiaoguan* (Hsinchu: Zhengwen chubanshe, 2000), "Shangdi ai shiren," and "Shangdi ai shiren dezaitaolun." ("God Loves the World," and "'God Loves the World' Reconsidered").

¹ It should be noted that of course this does not mean every person throughout history, or in modern times, who self-identifies as a Christian or a monotheist shares this point of view, or that this is the only possible way such people have and can determine their religious experience. There is much more in Judaism, Christianity and Islam than the points of view contained in their root scriptures and founding figures. The claim is only that this is what we find in those scriptures themselves when read with minimal unproved hermeneutic assumptions, and that believers embrace these perspectives only to whatever degree they conform to these founding figures as depicted there, and read in that hermeneutic perspective.

⁴ Shengyan, op. cit., pp. 1-3.

⁶ Ibid., p. 2.

of the existence of multiple genuinely distinct entities in the world. It includes all morality (valorizing one form of behavior over another), since this presupposes a real difference between one thing (i.e., a behavior) and another. It would also include all notions of personal or social progress, the passing from one state to another, for this presupposes the real difference between one state and another. It also includes all effort, the *endeavor* to move from one state to another, for the same reason. It would also include all hierarchy, which likewise presupposes the real difference between one rank and another. Without the contradictions involved in the existence of really distinct phenomena, none of these can exist. To get free of these contradictions means transcending dualism and conditionality in general. It is this, rather than any single positive unified being, that Shengyan primarily seems to mean by "absolute unity." The real problem of religion, Shengyan continues, is how to advance into this non-dual "absolute unity," conceived as the undivided totality of whatever might exist, without thereby denying the status of the individual, which seems prima facie to depend on precisely these dualistic contradictions. 6

These are the two elements, then, that every religion must balance, according to this theory: 1) dichotomy, individuality, multiplicity, opposition, as opposed to 2) unity, resolution, holism and harmony. More simply, every religion will, on this theory, be expected to contain both a dualistic side, making use of division, preferences, hierarchies, separate states and beings, and a nondual side, in which all of these are left behind. We can then expect to find both of these elements somehow combined in all religions. Shengyan's view seems to be that the non-dual state is the ultimate goal, which however must be careful to find some way, different in each case, to give due consideration to the diversity and indeed

oppositions that fill the empirical world.

In this, his premise is consistent with, and most likely derived from, a bare-bones version of the traditional thought of the Two Truths in Mahayana Buddhism: Conventional Truth and Ultimate Truth. Conventional Truth is the *means* by which the ultimate goal or end, which is Ultimate Truth, is attained. Conventional Truth (samvrti-satya) involves dualisms of right and wrong, good and evil, advance and retreat, this and that, nirvana and samsara, and so on—all premised on conditional beings, opposition, limitation, hierarchy, and dualism, all temporarily posited as a means. Ultimate Truth (paramārtha-satva), however, transcends all these dualisms, an experience of non-dualism that is enabled by the prior dualisms, which are thus transcended but preserved as a means. Hence in Buddhist texts we would expect to find both dualistic and non-dualistic claims, both statements that make separations and exclusions and hierarchies (separating good and evil, treating nirvana and samsara as radically distinct), and other statements that transcend these exclusions and dualisms and hierarchies (treating both samsara and nirvana, good and evil, on exactly the same terms, both ontologically and axiologically).

3. Monism and Dualism in the Bible

Shengyan's remarks allow us to take notice of a supremely important fact: that we will find both of these two elements—dualistic and non-dualistic—also prominently displayed, mixed together, in Christianity as well, but that they have *exactly the opposite* structure of that found in Buddhism and assumed in Shengyan's analysis. For Christianity is, he says, a system of "a monism with dualist consequences." This means that its *ultimate goal*, ethically, and its *ultimate principle*, metaphysically, is a deeply dichotomizing dualism: as Shengyan says, the key features of Christian thinking are "dualism between God and the world," "between creator and created, between heaven and hell, between believers and infidels, between the elect and the

[•] Ibid. Shengyan does not here address the meta-level problem that this distinction between the levels must belong to the sphere of "contradictions," for the same reason

damned." This "monistic" because God is the one creator of all things, but "dualism" because God is the one creator of all things, absolutely ontologically distinct from them, due to a concept of creation which requires that the creator must be prior to, and therefore entirely independent of, its creations. So the unity of God becomes a marker for the uniqueness of his position, his separation from creatures and their complete unilateral subordination to him and him alone and none other, foreclosing any possible reciprocity between the two positions: the unity actually only serves to enable and further exacerbate, rather than relieve, the dualisms.

The monism is evident in the Old Testament emphasis on God as creator of all things, which perhaps comes to be emphasized in the post-exilic parts of the Hebrew Bible as a polemical response against the Zoroastrian dualism that allegedly attributes two sources to things, one for the good and one for the evil. Against this, the Hebrew creator god is presented as the source of all things without exception, including both the good and the evil, including both love and judgment, including both life and death. But this is of course at the same time a polemical stance in the service of an endeavor of "separation," of holiness and sacredness as a separation of the pure from the impure, of those loyal and obedient to the one source and those not loyal and obedient to that source.

In the New Testament, this unity of God-as-creator and this separation of the obedient and non-obedient remains the premise. A new wrinkle is added, however, which greatly exacerbates *both* the unity *and* the dichotomy, and indeed the tension between them, but combined in a new structure which greatly changes their implications. Ethically, the "unification" comes specifically in the New Testament to be associated with extreme, uncompromising teachings of love, non-resistance, inclusion, exceptionless forgiveness and acceptance and tender care for others, those lovely

sentiments which many people find so uplifting and moving. These are the seemingly "monistic" or "non-dual" parts of the Christian teaching, an ethical application of the idea of removing all distinctions, even the distinction between oneself and others: for example, loving even thy enemy as thyself, just as God's sunlight and rain descend on all alike, good and evil, saint and sinner (Matthew 5:45). It would seem, however, that this uplifting effect is entirely dependent on taking these sentiments of love out of their context, out of their relation with the opposite tendency, the exclusive impulse of anger and condemnation and rejection which is also so much in evidence throughout the Gospels, and in bewildering close proximity to the teachings of love. Our claim here, however, is that an unbiased reading of these texts actually suggests that "dualistic" teachings of hatred, exclusion and judgment are the sole and explicit justification for, and actual goal to be attained by, the allegedly uplifiting teachings of love.

To understand more concretely just what this means, let us look at the actual words of Jesus as recorded in the Gospels. Anyone

disparate and heterogeneous texts, written at different times and with discernibly different agendas which construct discernibly different characters for their protagonist. My low-bar claim is simply that the four Gospels read en masse are what constitute the character of Jesus as presented by orthodox Christian tradition, and thus "Jesus" as a cultural marker signifies at the very least and primarily the protagonist of all four of these texts considered together, on the (probably false) ideal reader's presupposition that they are four views on an actual person/deity. This entitles us to read the unresolved conflicts in *all four* Gospels as resolved by the explicit resolutions of these tensions in any of them. The explicit resolution, i.e., the apocalyptic combination of inclusive love as means and exclusive judgment as ultimate goal, occurs in Matthew and Luke most clearly. But the same structure is discernible also in Mark and John. The high-bar claim would be that each gospel individually can also be best understood, and indeed is only coherent,

leafing through these texts will find many many examples of both extreme hate (exclusion, dualism, dichotomy, conditionality) and extreme love (inclusion, non-dualism, monism, unconditionality). We find Jesus making highly vituperative comments about any and all of those of his fellow human beings who do not immediately show deference to him or share his views: all such people are immediately and harshly repudiated as "hypocrites" (Matthew 6:5, 6:16, 23:13-15, Luke 12:1-2, 12:54-56), and "vipers" (Matthew 3:7, 23:33, Luke 3:7) and "whited sepulchers" (Matthew 23:27) and "the dead" (Luke 9:60) and "children of the devil" (John: 8:44), a violently exclusionary attitude toward whatever is deemed not part of his own program. Anyone not submissive to Jesus and his commandments of love is simply defined as ethically repulsive, and is to be treated with policies like "taking my enemies and slay them before me" (Luke 19:27) since after all "those who are not with me are against me," (Matthew 12:30, Luke 11:23): • what Jesus

on this premise of "monistic" dualism, though with varying emphases and degrees of explicit apocalypticism; but this claim would take more time to demonstrate than is available here.

Mark (9:40): "Whoever is not against us is for us." That may seem to be an improvement—but is it really? The black-and-white thinking, the marked and seeming willful blindness to the very concept of nuance, gray area, ambiguity, complexity, which we see everywhere in the Gospels, is just as much in evidence here as in the reverse dictum. And it is equally coercive, invoking the privilege of unilateral judgment: you may think you are indifferent to me—but I say that means you are against me (Matthew) or that you are for me (Mark, Luke). In either case, one is not *permitted* to be neutral, to suspend judgment, to have a complex or nuanced position or to abstain from taking a position. Only "for" and "against" exist. Is this a deep insight into an existential reality, or a fanatical superstition typical of aspiring cult leaders who see all reality only in terms of the one issue with which they are obsessed: their own status and authority?

demands in these passages seems to be an extirpation of whatever is against him and his program, from which the world is ultimately to be completely purged, as revealed in shockingly bloody-minded injunctions like "if your hand/eye offends you, pluck it out; for it is better to enter the Kingdom of Heaven maimed than to be thrown intact into hell" (Mark 9:43-45, Matthew 5:29-30)," or "Get thee behind me, Satan!" (Matthew 16:23; "Satan" in this case is just someone, in this case his own disciple Peter, expressing a religious opinion about Jesus of which Jesus disapproves), "hate your mother and father and brother and sister" (Luke: 14:26), and on and on. Again and again in these passages, we see a violently dualistic cast of mind, which sees absolutely nothing of value in the opposite viewpoints and deems it righteous to exterminate it without remainder, an attitude that is allergic to compromise, dialogue, moderation, tolerance and indeed nuance in expressing a relation to an opposing view, devoid of even minimal respect, even ritually, for one's ideological enemies. Conversely, we also find him issuing equally exaggeratedly loving injunctions to "love your enemies" (Luke 6:25, Matthew 5:44) and "judge not" (Luke 6:37, Matthew 7:1) and "turn the other cheek" (Luke 6:29, Matthew 5:39) and "give all you have to the poor" (Matthew 19:21), and occasional invocations of a non-discriminating view and equal treatment of all, the just and the unjust, like the all-embracing bounty of the sun and rain (Matthew 5:45). The contrast is bewildering, and rather fascinating. The question is: what is the relation between these wildly contrasted sentiments? Do they form part of a single coherent system of thought? What is the structure that fits them coherently together?

4. The Rosetta Stone for Interpreting the Gospels

We find the answer in the few places where the text *explicitly* relates the two tendencies, where in a single dictum or parable it combines extreme vindictiveness with extreme inclusiveness. It is here that the text tells us how to read itself, provides its own

master key, the Rosetta Stone of the Gospels. My claim, extending Shengyan's insight into the basic structure here, is that our best hermeneutic strategy for dealing with the apparent tensions in the text is to privilege these few places where the two opposed tendencies are explicitly combined, and given an explanation, rather than any of the parts of the text where only one of these tendencies is displayed separately; the latter are to be interpreted in terms of the former. Perhaps the clearest example of such a "master key" passage is the "Parable of the Tares," spoken by Jesus Christ in Matthew 13:24-30, and then *interpreted by Jesus himself* to his innermost disciples in Matthew 13:37-43, revealing its esoteric meaning in perfectly explicit terms:

- ²⁴ Another parable put he [Jesus] forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field:
- ²⁵ But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.
- ²⁶ But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.
- ²⁷ So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?
- ²⁸ He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?
- ²⁹ But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.
- ³⁰ Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.......
- ³⁶ Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.
- ³⁷He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good

seed is the Son of man;

- ³⁸ The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked *one*;
- ³⁹ The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels.
- ⁴⁰ As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world.
- ⁴¹ The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity;
- ⁴² And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.
- ⁴³ Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear. (King James Version)

Here we have the two opposed trends in their starkest form, but also combined in a single idea that is perfectly clear and intelligible: it tells us quite explicitly and unambiguously which is end and which is means, which is the goal and which is a mere temporary method of getting to that goal. Hatred for these evil people, spawn of the devil, is the ultimate truth, for God hates them so much that He is planning to destroy them. Tolerance of them is a regrettable but unavoidable temporary measure. Good people and evil people, in this story, come from two absolutely different sources, have nothing in common except for the fact that they are temporarily mixed together in this world. We are told *not* to destroy the evil tares *vet*, lest the wheat be destroyed too. That's explicitly so that the two can be more clearly separated later, so that the tares can be destroyed. The allowing of the inclusion of the two is a means, a temporary measure: in the end, there is to be absolute separation.

The full implications of this for the Christian teaching of "love" is perhaps better appreciated by considering another prediction of final separation of humans into two types, the good and the evil: the

parable of the Sheep and the Goats, spoken by Jesus in Matthew 25:32-46:

- ³¹ When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory:
- ³² And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth *his* sheep from the goats:
- ³³ And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.
- ³⁴ Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:
- ³⁵ For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in:
- ³⁶ Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me.
- ³⁷ Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed *thee*? or thirsty, and gave *thee* drink?
- ³⁸ When saw we thee a stranger, and took *thee* in? or naked, and clothed *thee*?
- ³⁹ Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?
- ⁴⁰ And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me.
- ⁴¹ Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:
- ⁴² For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink:
- ⁴³ I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.
- ⁴⁴ Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we

- thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee?
- ⁴⁵ Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did *it* not to one of the least of these, ye did *it* not to me.
- ⁴⁶ And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal. (KJV)

It is hard not to note the extreme love and the extreme hate here, the teaching of extreme inclusion intertwined shockingly closely with the teaching of extreme exclusion. This parable of the sheep and goats has an intriguing and revealing structure. It says, in effect: let us divide all people into two groups, i.e., 1) those people who include all people (the good people, the people who love and fear Jesus enough to think he might be lurking secretly anywhere, and thus treat the apparently lowly as if they were Jesus himself, and thus to be feared and pampered—i.e., those who love as commanded) and 2) those who do not (the evil people, the people who treat others according to their actual feelings and assessments about those specific people, i.e., people who are kind to some and unkind to others—i.e., those who do not love as Jesus commands). The principle of Last Judgment is twisted back into the principle of inclusion: those who love me, it turns out, are those who love, or at least pretend to love, all the lowliest people (or lowliest of "my brethren"—it remains a question whether the term "brethren" here includes the "children of the devil" mentioned in the Parable of the Tares). But we note a strange structural feature here: if this applied to people who were genuinely loving toward the lowliest people, it would be self-subverting; revealing that there will be a reward for this love is presented in the text itself as the true and only valid reason for the love, i.e., the fear that those people might turn out to be Jesus himself, the most powerful personage in the universe, the final judge, in disguise. If what was valued were genuine love of those lowly persons, the Gospel should *not* have revealed that they might be Jesus in disguise, a prospect which would surely be expected to provide an entirely different motivation for such actions. Thus if real love is valued, it should not have been preached as attached to the promise of rewards, and if it is preached in connection with rewards, what is being preached is not love but the recommendation to pretend to love, or to express the favored slave's (sincere) love and fear for his master, Master ("Lord") Jesus, as the (insincere) love for other people, in obedience to the command of the beloved and feared master. About those people themselves one is being told to remain suspicious—after all, in themselves they might be evil, those children of the devil, those tares, i.e., not loving, i.e., not people who love Jesus, like oneself, and therefore not people who obediently pretend to love everyone else who might be Jesus in disguise, as commanded. Such people ultimately deserve no love, we are taught, and God will be sure to show this eventually. Dichotomy is the ultimate truth, the real good. Tolerance and inclusion and love are merely a temporary tactic by which that goal of exclusion and dualism can be achieved.

Notice that this is just the same structure as we find in the Matthew 5: 45, cited above, from the Sermon on the Mount: there, once again, we are told to love our enemies, to treat all equally, whether they are good or evil, just as God's bounty of sunlight and rain descend on all impartially. But though at first this is justified as an imitation of the impartiality of God, it is immediately followed by an alternate justification: do this so as to get greater "reward" than "others," than "the pagans," the "tax-collectors" (Matthew: 5:46-47); we are to cease to differentiate between types of people as God does, so that God will differentiate between us and others: we are to regard all as equal so that we will be better than others. To put this strange and bluntly self-contradictory idea into a formula, the teaching of Jesus here seems to be this: Those who do not love all people, as God does, are rightfully hated by God! This means we must rethink the claim that God loves all, or at least the meaning of the word "love" in this context.

Let us try to imagine what it would feel like to take these

teachings to heart, what it would mean to learn to "love" human beings within the doctrinal horizon set up here. My love for humans is to be derivative of my love and fear of God, and my love and fear of my slave-master, my Lord, Jesus Christ, who as my sole creator and judge has absolute claims to my unquestioning obedience. I have after all been *commanded* to love God: but also to fear God. • When I meet any human being, I am ordered to show him love and care, whether he is a lowly needy person, as in the parable of the Sheet and Goats, or my enemy who is physically abusing me, as in the Sermon on the Mount. Now we must ask, why should I love him, and what would the nature of this love be in these conditions. My attitude, according to these two parables from the Gospels, should apparently be as follows: I should be unsure of this person's identity and ultimate worth in the view of God; I should think of this person I am to treat lovingly as quite possibly a child of the devil, rightfully hated by God and destined for absolutely justified torture and destruction at God's hand, but also as possibly someone who is beloved of God, a child of God. the elect of God, maybe even God himself in disguise. Anyone could be either a demonic being—defined here as the kind of being who is selfish, who does not take care of and love strangers and sufferers, in the fear that they might be disguised versions God and Jesus Christ—or an elect child of light destined for glory. The tares and wheat are mixed together in this world, impossible to tell apart: we are told to tend and care for them all, "bring them to harvest," so that they can be sorted out in the end.

5. What is Commanded When "Love" is Commanded

Taking these explicit premises into account, the result seems to be a command to express love to you, my fellow human being, unconditionally, but to do so in a state of mind characterized

Deuteronomy, Mark, etc.

by profound suspicion, cunning, cravenness and insincerity indeed, this "love" seems to be entirely analyzable into these four component attitudes. Suspicion: you might be a demonic being not only to be rightfully hated by me if I knew more about you, but objectively hateful, hateful to God, someone whom it would be entirely justifiable to hate, whom I will have a duty to hate once your true character is revealed at the end of the world: I am provisionally being nice to you until I find out whether you are in the class of beings I have been commanded to hate. Cunning: by treating you with exaggerated solicitude, even when you are repellent to me or harmful to me, I am laying up treasure for myself in Heaven (Matthew 6:20). Cravenness: I don't know anything about how you really are, whether you have any value, whether I even would like you if I knew you, in fact I'm told that I could never know that until the end of the world when God reveals it. in the harvest; but I am afraid of getting it wrong and accidentally being callous to the most powerful being in the universe, Jesus in disguise, so to cover my tracks I make sure I am sycophantically nice to you. Insincerity: the smile on my face, the kiss to your feet, the plate of food I put before you express the precise opposite of what I'm actually feeling toward you, which is only what is right to feel toward you based on the information about the actual structure of the universe as here revealed: suspicion that God might hate you, fear that you might be the avenging God in disguise, greed for an opportunity to flatter my master. It is perhaps hard to take the full measure of the bitter conclusion that seems to be emerging here, once we take into account the *structure* of the ends-means relation between the monistic and the dualistic elements built into this teaching: "love," in the mouth of Jesus Christ, means a particular combination of suspicion, fear, greed and lies. Trying to be absolutely impartial and bracketing all preconceptions, this does seem to be what we are instructed—nay, ordered—by Jesus to label with the word "love." This can be a very disconcerting result when we remember all the other conceptions of what "love" might mean. It is after all not that difficult to imagine other implications and

constructions of the concept of love, it could after all have been presented as meaning many other things: perhaps something like empathizing with someone else's suffering because of its analogy to my own suffering, from solidarity with the other as a fellow sufferer; or something like a spontaneous outflow of admiration and delight in your intrinsic worth and in the interest and ontic weight of your own thoughts, actions, being; or some sense that you being specifically the way you are and doing specifically what you do encourages me, opens me up, brightens me, inspires me to be what I am, or evokes in me a way to interact with you in more unexpected and novel ways, ways which expand the range of possible actions for us both, revealing to us both further unseen aspects of the universe we're living in. None of that seems to be at all relevant, or indeed possible, here. Instead, suspicion, greed, fear and lying, combined in what looks unavoidably like a hysterical cocktail of apocalyptic vindictiveness and self-righteousness onto which we have a rather preposterous label pinned: "love."

This is an extreme development of one small trend in the Hebrew Bible ("Old Testament"), one of many ways in which that older set of texts combines the monistic and the dichotomizing aspects that are intrinsic to monotheism. Indeed, it is perhaps the most extreme combination of the two, taking up, we might feel, some of the least appealing available aspects of the Old Testament. The entire New Testament teaching of Jesus, as combining the monistic and the dichotomous as means and ends in the fiery apocalypticism exemplified in Jesus' words above, seem to be an expansion of the depressing logic found very rarely but unmistakably in the Old Testament, as in Proverbs 25: 21-22:

The cause-and-effect sequence is a little ambiguous here, but

²¹ If thine enemy be hungry, give him bread to eat; and if he be thirsty, give him water to drink:

²² For thou shalt heap coals of fire upon his head, and the LORD shall reward thee.

it is clear that somehow treating your enemy nicely will actually cause your enemy pain, just like you wanted to do all along. This might be simply because it will intrinsically shame him, or else it might be, more disturbingly, because God will step in and mess him up. In either case, God will reward vou, which in itself might be enough to drive your enemy crazy, so one way or another, it is clear that a good way to harm your enemies is to pretend to be really nice to them. The New Testament authors take this hateful little turn of thought—kindness as tactical dissembling, so as to triumph in the end—to be the real essence of the tradition, choosing it out from all the other available hermeneutic options • exaggerating it, dramatizing it, hystericizing it, and combining the two extremes so created specifically as means and ends. Hence we find St. Paul summing up the Christian teaching to his Romans (Romans 12:9-20) by quoting precisely this line from Proverbs. Here is how Paul says Christians ought to love everyone, how they ought to love "one another" (which in context of the contrast made immediately afterwards can really only mean not all humans but rather the in-group, the "saints,"), on the one hand, but also how

they out to love others, their enemies (the out-group), on the other:

- ⁹ *Let* love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good.
- ¹⁰ Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honour preferring one another;
- ¹¹ Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord;
- ¹² Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer;
- ¹³ Distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality.
- ¹⁴ Bless them which persecute you: bless, and curse not.
- ¹⁵ Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep.
- ¹⁶ Be of the same mind one toward another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits.
- ¹⁷ Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men.
- ¹⁸ If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.
- ¹⁹ Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but *rather* give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance *is* mine; I will repay, saith the Lord.
- ²⁰ Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head.

To "each other" and to "the saints" and "thy brethren"—i.e., to fellow Christians—we have the injunction to love and "give all." The New Testament shows us pretty unmistakably, in Chapter 5 of *Acts of the Apostles*, how the early Christian community felt about those who did not "distribute to the necessity of saints," which means, in plain English, those who refuse to release all their wealth and belongings into the coffers of the Christian community (sometimes also called "the Poor," i.e., the "Ebionites"), in the

Amply illustrated by the other sects of the same period—the much-maligned Pharisees and Saducees of the New Testament—who were bound to the same holy scripture but did not conclude from it any such ends-means doctrine of cartoonishly mawkish inclusion as a tool for final, and cartoonishly brutal exclusion, love as a tool for hate, i.e., the doctrines of eternal heaven and eternal hell which are so central to the Gospels. The latter ideas seem to be, if not the ex nihilo invention of Jesus or the NT writers, at least an idea that was newly made central and developed as the lynchpin for a new form of religious consciousness. What seems to be really new in Jesus is the idea of ethics entirely subverted to post-mortem reward and punishment, so that the sole value of actions is found in their after-death valence, which was the opposite of their pre-death valence. Hence, the distinctively Jesusian structure of love as a tool for hatred, acceptance as a tool for judgment, self-abnegation as a tool for self-exaltation, and so on.

story of the unfortunate new converts Ananias and Sapphira, who are rebuked by "Saint" Peter for not immediately giving *all* their wealth to the Christian authorities: they straightaway *drop dead*, and the text presents this as a fine example of God's great power and righteousness and protection of the Christian community. So Christians are definitely required to love "each other," also referred to as "the Brethren" or "My Friends, that is, those who do all that I command of them" (John15: 14)—a definition of "friend" that is again very revealing about the early Christian notion of what "love" means: a gloss, perhaps, on the dichotomous dictum of Jesus at Matthew 12:30: "He who is not for me is against me."

As to enemies, those who are not members of the Christian community, one is indeed required to "love" them as well. There it is: that inclusion and overcoming of distinctions on the ethical level, the famous Christian teaching of universal love, the "monism." But "Saint" Paul leaves no doubt about the meaning and justification for this moving invocation of extreme love and charity to your enemy: in so doing you'll be heaping coals of fire on his head. That's how you should feel while you're helping him out: take that, sucker! Here again we see clearly the structure of ends-and-means which pervades the New Testament teaching from beginning to end, the inseparability of the a nuance-free extremism of love, holding nothing back in its lurching passion, bewilderingly juxtaposed to an equally passionate vindictiveness and hatred, to the lusty savoring of the coming torture of the enemy. Indeed, there is something deeply fascinating and compelling in this bewildering juxtaposition—even more so, perhaps, though in a different sense, when bewilderment gives way to astonishment at the ultimate subordination of love to hate which *alone* is offered by the Bible as the justification of such extremities of love.

6. The "Now-Versus-Then" Structure of Early Christian Eschatology as Ends-Means Relation Between Monism and Dichotomy

For we are now in a position to understand the great contribution made by Shengyan's simple remarks on this topic: it points our attention to the *necessary* connection between the love and the hate that are both so starkly on display in the teachings of Jesus, which have confused and, indeed, fascinated so many, with sometimes catastrophic results. For it is obvious that Jesus is hotheadedly commanding both extreme love and extreme hate; the question is how and why this can be so. Most readers quickly notice that, as compared even with the Old Testament, the inclusive tendency and the exclusive tendencies are both wildly exacerbated in the Jesus of the New Testament. The more fanatical version of exceptionless inclusion comes hand in hand with a more fanatical version of radical separation, dichotomy, dualism: namely, the new doctrine of eternal heaven and hell, completely unknown in the Hebrew Bible ("Old Testament"). How are the extreme monism and the extreme dichotomization combined? What is the underlying thought here? The most convincing answer is, in my view, still that proposed by the great Albert Schweitzer, who has argued a position **②** that more and more impartial biblical scholars are gradually coming to confirm: the key to Jesus' ethical teachings is a thoroughgoing eschatology, the belief that the world is going to end very soon, to be followed by a Last Judgment which will once and for all separate the good from the evil, the obedient from the disobedient, forever. As Schweitzer says, Jesus' ethic is from beginning to end an "interim ethic": the teachings of love and inclusion are meant as temporary measures, *extremely* temporary measures, to be enacted before the imminently coming ("before

¹ Albert Schweitzer, The Secret of the Kingdom of God and The Search for the Historical Jesus.

some who are standing here have tasted death" Mark: 9:1, Luke 9:27, Matthew 16:28) end of the world. The whole point of those loving teaching is that they are of exactly the opposite character of the real state of things to be revealed when the apocalypse arrives. The Christian teaching of love is an "interim ethic": that is, its sole justification, as given in the Gospels from the mouth of Jesus, is that this extreme and theatrically exaggerated display of inclusion and love is something that will be rewarded—and quite soon by a reversal. By accepting all, you will soon be able to reject all; by letting all your opponents live and thrive, you will soon be able to destroy all those opponents. One abases oneself as a servant to all, and judges no one—in order to later "judge the world" (1 Corinthians 6:2) as a reward from God for one's absolute display of obedience when the apocalypse comes. One displays rather ludicrously dramatized and extreme forgiveness and submission and giving, forgiving one's enemies "seventy times seventy times" (Matthew 17:22) and other injunctions which seem to be some exciting suspension of the very ideas of *nuance* and *moderation* because one is thereby, as St. Paul says, really "pouring coals on the head" of one's enemy, for *God* will be the one who takes revenge for you, because "vengeance is mine, saith the Lord." In short, the Christian teaching displays a heady and often confusing mix of both extreme love and extreme anger, extreme forms of both inclusion and exclusion, but in a very specific temporal and instrumental relationship: inclusion (i.e., love, forgiveness, selfdenial) is a temporary means to the real goal, which is eternal separation, self-glorification and dominion over one's enemies, final and total dichotomy.

It is instructive to work one's way through the entire teaching of Jesus in the Gospels with this structure in mind. For once we note this, the captivating illusion of seemingly deep teachings based on some undisclosed insight into ethical truths instantly evaporates, and we discover, somewhat to our astonishment, that the most notable "love" teachings are actually presenting exactly this eschatological structure of love-as-means-to-final-

hate, acceptance-as-a-means-to-separation, unconditionality-asmeans-to-conditional-dualism, seemingly "hidden in plain sight." Consider the Beatitudes, often cited as Jesus most representative and profoundly loving teaching, the centerpiece of the Matthew's "Sermon on the Mount" and Luke's "Sermon on the Plain." Our Rosetta Stone enables us to understand without difficulty the seemingly mysterious contrast of "blessed are X now, for they *shall* be in just the opposite position—and conversely." As Schweitzer points out, the "now versus then" structure saturates all these ethical teachings, the menacing threat of the imminent Last Judgment being the unspoken premise throughout; the means-end structure of that projection to that imminent future is the reason given for the teaching. Be meek, loving, peace-making, hungry for righteousness, non-judgmental, pure in spirit, last and a servant to all NOW, for those who are shall then be rulers of the earth, see God, be filled, be first, judge the world, etc. Similarly, those who laugh now will weep then, and so on. Those enemies we do kindness for *now* will have coals heaped on their heads *then*.

Thus, a close reading of the New Testament reveals seemingly without exception that in Jesus's teaching, monism, acceptance, non-dualism, love, are not the goal, but the means. The goal is rather absolute dichotomy, absolute dualism, the final judgment that separates good from evil. That is, the case is *exactly the opposite* of the Buddhist case, although the two are confused if it is simply noted that they both involve these two seemingly opposed tendencies of inclusion and exclusion. **3** The key

¹⁹ The "mistaken identity" motif of the parable of the Sheep and the Goats is interesting in this context. If there were any way for the principle of ultimate judgment, the separation into two types, to be *subsumed* into, subordinated to, this principle of emptying out the identity of "Jesus" (for here he says: "Jesus" is really all these other people, so loyalty to and faith in Jesus should really mean loyalty to and faith in them *instead*), for the separation to be made into the part or the means and inclusion to be made into the whole or the end,

structural feature of this monism with dualistic consequences is that it combines two apparently sharply opposed tendencies: 1) the tendency toward inclusiveness, as seen in the teaching of universal love, and self-denial as a cancellation of the dualism between self and other and 2) the tendency toward aggressive self-assertion and extreme exclusivity, linked to the fanatical demonization of one's ideological enemies, where the dichotomy between self and other is brought to a much higher pitch than even in ordinary deluded life. What is crucial however is that 1) is the *means*, while 2) is the *end*, *the goal*. What is really valued here is dualism; temporary non-dualism is just a method by which to attain it.

Christian teaching would approach the structure we see in varying degrees and varying forms in the (only?) non-Jesus-praising forms of ideology, the only extensively developed systems of which we are aware that developed untouched by the Jesusist mode of thinking, i.e., the traditional Chinese forms of Confucianism, Daoism or Buddhism: I mean the structure of using dualism or conditionality to reach non-dualism or non-conditionality. If the two could converge into one, we would even have the highest Buddhist teaching, the Tiantai doctrine where Conventional and Ultimate Truth, means and ends, inclusion and exclusion, the conditional and unconditional, are revealed to be one and the same without losing their contrast. But unfortunately, the parable of the Wheat and Tares definitely excludes this possibility once and for all.

• We have an excellent modern example of this structure in the "Hundred Flowers" program instituted by Mao Zedong in the 1950s, showing Mao to be deeply influenced by the Bible, consciously or unconsciously. For the structure is chillingly similar to the Christian picture of the very nature of human life on this planet: a testing ground of temporary freedom in which to demonstrate who is sincerely obedient to the ruler and who is not, to smoke them out and find out who deserves punishment and who reward. Mao lifted all strictures on criticism and free expression *temporarily*, as a means to *the exact opposite*: let there be "free will" for awhile so we can see who really loves me and who's just pretending. Then we will know what to do with them.

7. General Proposition for Comparative Method

We may propose a useful general methodological principle derived from this set of considerations, to be applied when confronted with any religion, any philosophy, any ideology, any point of view. The real question that reveals the deep structure and ultimate character of any doctrine is always, not what is being proposed or recommended or commanded, but how does it relate to whatever is the opposite of what is being proposed, to whatever its proposition excludes. What does it say about its enemies, or about those who do not accept its claims and values? That is, concomitant with any assertion that X is so or X is good, what attitude is being simultaneously proposed for whatever is non-X, or anti-X? If X is "love," what attitude is being proposed or displayed concerning "hate" or "those who hate"? If X is "obedience," what attitude is being displayed concerning "disobedience" or "the disobedient"? If X is "ritual propriety," what attitude is being proposed or displayed concerning "impropriety"? If X is "non-attachment," what attitude is being proposed or displayed concerning "attachment" and those who display it? If X is "truth," how is falsehood treated? If X is "empirical evidence and sound reasoning," how are superstition and baseless speculation treated? This, more than the ostensible content of the X, will tell us what the real character of any teaching is. The Christian teaching of "love" and "non-violence" shows its real character through its attitude toward the non-loving and the violent: it violently hates them.

Shengyan makes clear that this ultimate valuation of a sharp us-them dichotomy, the ultimate dualism, far from being an accidental or occasional feature, is the *essence* of Jesus' teaching as depicted in the New Testament, the "one thread" of its deepest principle which alone really explains everything else in the doctrine. Noting the "attachment to self" (我執 *wozhi*) of the Old Testament God Yahweh, Shengyan goes on to remark, "Even in the character of Jesus Christ in the Four Gospels of the New Testament, this 'attachment to self' mentality is extremely

strong and intense," adding with considerable irony that this attachment to self that is so ugly in Jesus Christ "is something we should forgive and empathize with, just as we should forgive ourselves and empathize with ourselves for the same tendency." **6** Jesus applies the inclusive, forgiving tendency, the call to transcend the dichotomy between nationalities and between saint and sinner, only to Christians, i.e., only to those who accept his authority and pledge themselves to absolute obedience to him. This goes hand in hand with the opposite tendency, to demonize and condemn anyone who does not accept this condition of obedience, i.e. all non-Christians. The two are correlative to one another, and the extremism of the love is mirrored by the extremism of the hate. Shengyan gives an example of how someone outside the sphere of influence of Jesusist ideas might view an ideological enemy, i.e., in traditional Buddhist fashion: the outgroup person, Jesus, who exemplifies the traits considered undesirable by his in-group. Buddhists (i.e., exemplifying attachment to self, extremism and a monistism with dualistic consequences) is here brought into the inclusive regard of a consideration that cancels the dichotomy, transcends it. Shengyan recommends a forgiving and empathetic attitude toward this repulsive egoistic immoral tendency in Jesus, just as we empathize with the same kind of egoism in ourselves. The opposition to the out-group here is a reminder that we are also non-dually implicated in those same traits, and thus the out-group is to be regarded as we regard the in-group, that is, as always both in and out, non-dichotomously. If this seems similar to the Jesus method of "forgiving enemies," we are not reading carefully enough. For on the contrary, this is a perfect example of the opposite of a monistism with dualistic consequences: we might call it "bifurcation with monistic consequences."

6 Ibid., p. 6.

8. Importance of the Critique Specifically of Jesus

But why read so carefully, we might wonder? What would be wrong with turning a blind eye to this dark underbelly and just accentuating the positive, the superficial resemblance to a non-hate-saturated form of forgiveness, so as to help spread that attitude in the world? Why keep one's eye fixed on the substructure of hatred supporting the injunctions to love?

My answer is that failure to note the exact relation between the extreme love and the extreme hate in the New Testament, and their strictly proportional inseparability, tends to lead to several misunderstandings of the teaching that have proved extremely perilous in the history of the human race so far. The failure to critique the teachings of Jesus, or the harboring of some residual respect for them, or the impulse to divert critical attention from Jesus to the larger issue of "God" or "religion," runs the following risks, at a minimum:

1) Aiding and abetting the spread of Christianity. Christianity is spreading at an alarming rate in the modern world, particularly in Asia. Anything that spreads in this way, even if it is not intrinsically harmful, is potentially very dangerous. A lump in one's body may be innocuous; but if the same lump begins spreading and metastasizing rapidly, that lump is cancer. What makes it cancer is not the lumpiness, not anything about the lump itself considered at a single moment in time, but the spread of it, and what it does to the things around it when it spreads, i.e., the way it deprives them of nutrition and life. While Christians and some neutral parties may find Christian expansionism unobjectionable, from a world culture perspective, even if Christianity were a good thing in some sense (which we are far from assuming here), it would be a bad thing for the pluralism of world value systems for its continued spread to go unchecked, as it has a demonstrated tendency, seen

- throughout its history, to destroy (through demonizing, monopolization, propaganda, poisoning the wells) all alternate cultures and value-systems.
- The claim that only the "love" part is the genuine Jesus—the rest is added by wicked or stupid disciples (even Nietzsche sometimes went for this ridiculous and insupportable trope 6). But this preserves the glamor of the figure of Jesus as a symbol of love; he ends up being imaginatively reconstructed on the barest bones of the archetype, absorbing all the goodwill of some genuinely admirable figures: a martyr for his vision of truth like Socrates, a mighty avenger of injustice for the downtrodden like Spartacus, a Capraesque defender of the weak and powerless, a big-brother stepping in to fend off the bullies, a John Wayne giving his life to save his brothers on the battlefield, a satirist of prigs and bureaucrats like Oscar Wilde—"Jesus" comes to be a symbol that wraps all these tasty heroes into one, creating a cocktail of irresistible charm. But that means that when future readers, already convinced by their culture since childhood that Jesus equals love and romantic cool and heroism, go and look at the actual text of the Bible to find out about him, they will either have to be sharply disillusioned or, much worse, take what he actually says there as new and important information about the nature of love, about coolness, about heroism: for the results of this, see the next few items.
- 3) Ethical Rationalizing and Reverse Engineering: One convinces oneself that the claims and attitudes embodied by Jesus are somehow ethically reasonable in their own right, because one has decided to take no account of the extremely bizarre and already disproved superstition
- See his comments on Jesus in *The Anti-Christ*, and in some of his posthumously published notes collected in *The Will to Power*.

- which is the sole basis of Jesus' ethical position—i.e., the belief in the promised end-of-world judgment which Jesus explicitly states will arrive "before all standing here have tasted death" (Luke 9:27, Matthew 16:28), where those who are presently suffering will be exalted and those who are presently enjoying themselves will be tortured or destroyed. These bizarre claims, freed from this factually incorrect superstitious premise, exercise a powerful attraction due to their combination of extreme love joined to extreme hate, and their enticingly paradoxical juxtaposition, which fascinate in their demand for an alternate, "deep" explanation.
- One type of "deep" explanation that springs to mind: the claim that love is what it's really all about, but the hate which is also found to be obviously really there must be an appropriate response to the failure of others to respond to this love: one concludes that real love is something which very justly requires one to hate when the love is not reciprocated. Hence one is forced to conclude that it is "good" to be like Jesus was, which means it is good to preach love of one's enemies while hating the enemies of the idea of loving one's enemies. Following the example of Jesus means that it is reasonable to hate anyone who is unimpressed by, indifferent to or skeptical of one's claims about oneself or about one's displays of love, it is good to make deliberately offensive and grating claims about oneself, about the world, and about all rival systems of valuation and then to explode in wrath at anyone who dares so much as ask why any of one's outlandish claims should be believed or obeyed, for this is what we see Jesus doing again and again in the Gospels. All that is now considered exemplary of love, of virtue, of how "truth" speaks. In short, love hates those who do not accept its love. Love destroys those who refuse the offer of love—and this is itself now to be regarded as legitimate, holy, admirable,

- exemplary behavior. One wonders if the strong parallelism with the ideology energetically encouraged by Lenin in the early 20th century, and its instinctive appeal to many otherwise intelligent people, is not more than coincidence.
- is represented by a particular exclusivist party which is viewed as entirely within its rights, and behaving in a holy way, when it destroys all those who are against this universal love, when it hates all those who don't love or stand in the way of this universal love it is proffering. Those who do not support the universal brotherhood must be destroyed. All human beings are brothers—so whoever refuses to be my brother (or rather: whoever I *judge* to be refusing to be my brother, do to his non-participation in or indifference to my all-men-are-brothers movement) is no longer a human being, and can be exterminated like a dog. Again, one wonders about Lenin, Stalin, *et al.* in this context.
- The idea takes hold that Jesus was the most perfectly loving being of all time—just look at his preaching of extreme uncompromising love! But then one must conclude that, if even he, nonetheless, was driven to the point of hating anyone, those people he hated must have been so bad that even the most loving being of all time couldn't keep from hating them: they must really deserve to be hated. Anyone who rejects Jesus thus really deserves to be hated, is worthy of destruction, is ontologically beyond redemption. The general name used by the New Testament Jesus for those who are offered his teaching but remain uninterested or unmoved by it is "the Jews," those "hypocrites" and "liars" and "children of the Devil." A mythology is built around making a specific historical group of people, still present in the world and easy to identify, into the symbol of evil; some group of people is born into a situation where they are singled out, by virtue of their alleged metaphysical

nature as members of that group, and equated by some other people as the cause and embodiment of *all* that is wrong with the world—or more strictly, all that is wrong with the *universe*. In this case, though it is awkward to say, one has to wonder a little about the parallels with Hitler, but really also more broadly about the transfer of the same paradigmatic structure onto *any* specific group, i.e., all the specifically European and post-European forms of racism.

To conclude, Shengyan's work shows the inner connection between these two seemingly incompatible trends in the most basic premises of the Gospels' religious vision, and how they necessarily go together on those premises. This structure of demonizing one's ideological enemies, pitting in-group against out-group, where the in-group is at the same time identified with the principle of universal inclusion, with love, with all-inclusiveness, is a tactic seemingly invented or perfected by the Jesus of the Gospels. and remains influential, and due to its association with Christian prestige has come to be defended as morally and spiritually legitimate. It lives on and animates modern racism, fascism, and Bolshevism, all of which give all-inclusive affirmation with one hand while simultaneously building this in-group solidarity on the basis of a vociferous condemnation of an out-group, making the exclusivity morally appealing and palatable by linking it to the selfsacrificing ideology of in-group inclusivity—what we might call "Jesusism." Buddhism is one of the few remaining ideologies that can realistically and judiciously assess this sort of Jesusism and its continued influence on world culture, even in disguised forms, as the characteristic "monism with dualistic consequences" of these movements. In so doing, Buddhist thought provides one of the few remaining alternatives to this way of thinking.

9. Alternatives to Monisms with Dualistic Consequences

Let us examine this alternative more closely. I suggested above a possible term for the opposite structure: bifurcation with monistic consequences. Here too we find the same two elements. the dualistic and the non-dual, but with the opposite relation between them. Mahayana Buddhism too has both a dualistic and a non-dualist aspect. These are organized in terms of the Two Truths, which to a large extent are themselves modeled on the "raft parable" of early Buddhism. Here too the structure is "dualism" (morality, judgment, discipline, authoritarianism, hierarchy) as a *means* by which to transcend dualism (the other shore of Emptiness, beyond any either/or, beyond the mutual exclusivity of "this" and "that"). This is, again, precisely the opposite of the structure in Christianity. In more complex ways, classical Confucianism and Daoism each in their own way involve both a deliberate. dualistic, judgment-making dimension, and a spontaneous, nondual all-embracing dimension: in classical terms, both youwei 有為 and wuwei 無為 Confucius says: "At fifteen, I set my mind on learning. At thirty, I could take my stand. At forty, I was no longer uncertain. At fifty, I became acquainted with the Mandate of Heaven. At sixty, it entered my ears smoothly. At seventy, I could follow my own desires without ever overstepping the proper measure." This model moves from "dualism" (right versus wrong, choosing one course over another, effort) to "non-dualism" (spontaneous inclusion of all impulses, no longer choosing, no longer requiring effort), at least subjectively. Many forms of Daoist cultivation often involves a similar structure, from *youwei* to wuwei. • So the danger of not understanding the structure of dichotomy and monism in Christianity is that a superficial observer notes that Confucianism, Daoism and Buddhism all involve both a "harsh" side and a "soft" side, an exclusive side and an inclusive side, a rejecting side and an accepting side, an authoritarian side and a libertarian side, just like Christianity, and thus it is assumed that these systems are all compatible, or that all religions somehow teach the same truths or the same morals, or else that all are equally hideous ideological ruses. What is neglected here is that the structure is exactly the opposite: generally speaking, what is mere temporary means in Christianity is final goal and ultimate value in the Chinese traditions, what is mere temporary means in these traditions is final goal and ultimate value in Christianity. This means their *ultimate values* are diametrically opposed. The end result, though, is that in modern discussions these traditions are assimilated to Christianity rather than vice-versa. We lose what is truly distinctive, what could provide the rarest thing in the world, a genuine alternative to Christianity, about these traditions, as they come to be read more and more as ultimately promoting a moral and epistemological dualism, using their non-dualism only as a means, only therapeutically.

From this point of view we begin to understand also the uncanny *appeal* of Christianity. For it is mistaken for profound, it moves souls, because of the juxtaposition of vociferously extreme love and vociferously extreme hate, radical conditionality and radical unconditionality. If one neglects the simple and unparadoxical eschatological structure that binds these together as ends and means, masking a straightforward dualism of the most cruel and depressing kind, one can get the mistaken impression of being in the presence of a genuine paradox, a paradox commensurate with the paradox which is our own existence, in which we live and move and have our being. The *real* convergence

The Daoism of the *Daodejing*, the founding document of what I am referring to as Daoism here, is a bit more complex: it uses *wuwei* to attain *many alternate youwei*, and also uses *youwei* to attain *wuwei*, crisscrossed in complex ways. But this can only be adequately clarified with a more detailed

and expansive analysis. See my Ironies of Oneness and Difference (Albany: State University of New York Press: 2012).

of radical conditionality and radical unconditionality has been attempted here and there in human history—the most unmistakable example of which I am aware is called *Tiantai Buddhism*. Christianity is to that kind of truth what fake X is to real X: it is parasitic on the demand for real X, but it also ruins the appetite for it by filling the same ecological niche. As Confucius said, according to Mencius:

```
孔子曰:「惡似而非者:惡莠,恐其亂苗也;惡佞,恐
其亂義也;惡利口,恐其亂信也;惡鄭聲,恐其亂樂也;
惡紫,恐其亂朱也;惡鄉原,恐其亂德也。」
```

Confucius said, "I hate a semblance which is not the reality. I hate the tares, lest they be confounded with the wheat. I hate flattery, lest it be confounded with righteousness. I hate eloquence, lest it be confounded with sincerity. I hate the music of Zheng, lest it be confounded with the true music. I hate the reddish blue, lest it be confounded with vermilion. I hate your good careful men of the villages, lest they be confounded with the truly virtuous."

The reference to wheat and tares here provides a good example of the dangers Jesusism, in several senses. Those who are by now culturally inundated with Jesusist tendencies (statistically speaking, almost all living persons) will be inclined to read this line as parallel to Jesus' parable of the wheat and tares, perhaps even confirming the wisdom of it, or standing as proof of the universality of this way of thinking. For there it is again: because of love for something, something else is hated! It's that same structure all over again, isn't it? Not at all. Hence again the importance of distinguishing them. *Why* hate, *when* hate, *how* hate—these matter. Why does Confucius hate the tares? Not because they are intrinsically bad, and not even because they are starving the wheat. Rather, *because they might be mistaken for the wheat*. What to do about that? Distinguish them clearly, if you want wheat rather

than tares. Does this mean wheat is better than tares? No, it means, quite reasonably, that if one wants wheat oneself—not because God prefers wheat to tares, or because wheat is objectively better than tares, but because it happens to be edible to a creature like oneself and one is *hungry*—one needs to be able to distinguish wheat from tares, in spite of their superficial resemblance. Indeed, it is another lamentable consequence of Christianity and post-Christian philosophy that readers of a statement like this in Confucius, whether approving his deep moral insight or decrying his ideological trickery, will almost always assume that of course this talk of "hating" tares means that Confucius thinks God or Heaven hates them, or the moral order of the universe excludes them, or that they're objectively bad, or that we should all hate them all the time—after all, that's the kind of thing ethicists claim, and Confucius, these people believe, is an ethicist. But this notion of what ethics are, or of what ideologies are, is itself completely saturated with Jesusian assumptions. Mencius is here saying Confucius hated certain things, and why—and Mencius has just told us quite a lot about hating and loving things, which he consistently compares to his own feelings about tasty roast meat and other edible delicacies like bear-paw. We have absolutely no reason to assume any other model of what bestows value here. Does Confucius' hatred of tares imply that he is recommending destroying the tares? That is not at all said, nor implied, given the parallel instances in the quotation. The meaning is clear: the noble person should learn to pick the wheat and avoid the tares, and train others to do the same. Each should be put in its proper place in our esteem, seen for what it is. As Zhu Xi says, "The good careful men of the village are neither overly-self-assertive nor overly-cautious, so everyone thinks they are 'good.' They resemble the Way of the Mean but are actually completely different. Thus Confucius fears that they will be confused with those with real Virtue."

❸ 鄉原不狂不獧,人皆以為善,有似乎中道而實非也,故恐其亂德。

The moral here is that if we are looking for exemplars on which to model our own ethical growth, we must be careful not to take the behavior of these lukewarm goody-goodies of the village as worth aspiring to. If their growth does interfere with the growth of the wheat, however, then there would be reason to clear the tares out *now*, not at the harvest time, as in Jesus' apocalyptic parable. So there are conceivable rational grounds for either clearing out the weeds or learning to avoid the weeds and not take them for wheat—but not for tolerating the weeds as a means to later clear them out, as in the Christian teaching. In fact, however, Confucius does not recommend "clearing out" the weeds at all • —in this case, the real reference is to the "good careful men of the village" (鄉原 xiangyuan). Rather they are to be ignored—not violently condemned, not ridiculed, barely even mentioned. Above all, they are not hated because they are creations of an ontologically separate and opposed source from us, they are not in some sense "children of the devil," seeds sown by our Father's "enemy," as Jesus's tares are, which deserve only destruction. They are not hated for what they are, for anything about themselves at all. In themselves they are quite harmless, even well-intentioned, and not to be condemned. Again we must apply here the logic of the lump: in itself it is harmless. It is objected to if and only if it spreads. In the present case, "spreading" would occur only through the logic of false admiration and subsequent emulation. The sole objectionable point of the *xiangyuan* then lies not in themselves but in the foolishness of others who might, seeing them, mistake their behavior for real virtue and emulate it, thus missing out on the more heroic virtues promulgated by Confucius,

Mencius and their ancient paragons like Yao and Shun. As long as we are alerted to this possibility, those good careful men, those tares, are harmless, perhaps even doing some small good in limited ways, within the limited scope of their villages. It is only when they are raised up from that context and made into exemplars—taken for "wheat"—that they are dangerous.

The further irony here, however, is that Jesusism is itself the weed, the tare: it superficially resembles the both-and love and hate of the (very few remaining) non-Christian systems, the copresence of inclusion and exclusion, though in its deep structure it is the precise reverse of them, and thus it is mistaken for them. Increasingly, in modern times, the tares are growing, the wheat is starving. As Shengyan suggested, in accordance with Mahayana Buddhism, a person full of egoism and hatred like the Jesus of the New Testament, if he existed, would be entitled to our compassion, just like all the other beings embroiled in egoism and hatred, including ourselves. But that would apply to the person Jesus, considered in himself, just as it would apply to the "good careful men of the village," considered solely in themselves. In terms of effects on others, "hating" Christianity and Jesus in this way does not make Shengyan, or any other hater of Jesus, "just as bad" as a Christian, and hence a hypocrite. We need not hate the twisted hate-mongering superstitious fanatic of a person Jesus was (real or fictional) and consider him a child of demons, the spawn of evil forces unbridgeably other to ourselves, the way Jesus hated those whom he opposed, or even the vociferous way Jesus hated anyone who was unimpressed by, indifferent to or skeptical of him, anyone who dared so much as ask for why he should be believed. We do not think he deserves to be destroyed by God. We need not hate Jesus as Jesus hated us ("whoever is not with me is against me" Matthew 12:30). We need not hate Jesus per se. We hate what happens when people uncritically take Jesus to be someone trustworthy about religion or ethics, whether as a god or as a terrific human being, an exemplar, a standard of ethics or a source of insight about the nature of the universe. We hate his influence.

It might be possible to argue that some later representatives of the Confucian tradition, e.g., Xunzi, do recommend clearing out at least some of the "tares." But a full treatment of this question, and its application at each weigh-station within the history of Confucian traditions will require a more extensive discussion at a later time.

· 48 · 聖嚴研究

We hate what the continued spread of such teachings do when they are confused with superficially similar but actually structurally deeply different and opposed teachings, which are being crowded out of global human culture by growing Christianity almost to the point of extinction. If the time has come when we must hate Jesus, let us hate him as Confucius hated tares, not as Jesus hated tares.

Against Monisms with Dualistic Consequences 反一元論的二分法 · 49 ·

Bibliography

Shi Shengyan, Jidujiao zhi yanjiu (Taipei: Dongchu chubanshe, 1967).

Albany: State University of New York Press: 2012.

King James Version (KJV) of the Bible.

反一元論的二分法 —論聖嚴批判耶穌人格特徵 及教義之重要性

任博克

美國芝加哥大學神學院教授

▋摘要

聖嚴法師為反擊基督教對佛教的批判,於一九七六年出版了探討基督教的論文集:《基督教之研究●》。此書內容是由印順法師同樣歷史語境下的相關著作②中一些已有主題發展而來。本文集中討論了聖嚴對基督教的徹底分析,尤其關注了他對福音書中描述的耶穌人格特徵及教義的批判。

現代語境下,不同宗教間彼此進行批判的行為不再流行。相反地,這些宗教更偏好去強調彼此間的相同之處與對話關係,認為這才是通往和諧與和平的路徑。這種跨宗教的對話與寬容之路實質為佛教所開闢,這或許部分源於大乘佛教「方便」(Upaya)觀對真理進行多種表達的傳統。此種作風無疑可發揮佛教偉大的包容精神,對世界文化做出極大貢獻。然而,本文認為:佛教在宗教批判、尤其在對一神論

宗教進行批判時也發揮了同等重要的作用。即使主張宗教對話者在世界範圍內聲稱所有宗教都在某種程度上傳授相同的真理、鼓勵相同的道德,但一神教的全球擴張仍對吸收無神論宗教觀點構成了持續不減的威脅:真理與道德最終更多地淪為一神論所謂的真理與道德,珍貴的非一神論宗教卻愈來愈難被發現。

聖嚴對此批判的重要性在於:他不但批判舊約中的上帝及傳統神學,更重要的是進一步著重地批判了耶穌本身。前者對包括教徒在內的許多當代人而言顯得尋常、且陳舊無禮。後者則不同:耶穌被世界多數國家(無論信仰宗教與否)中的非教徒輕率地讚揚、接受,並被視為某種聖人及和平愛好者,似乎已經能夠與孔子或佛陀齊名。耶穌已變為基督教、伊斯蘭教、印度教、共產主義、通俗人道主義,甚至某些猶太民族主義的英雄。不人云亦云,能夠通過獨立思考,對耶穌的思想及人品進行深層考察之人較為罕見。

與此相反,聖嚴為界定以基督教為代表的一神論宗教的特徵,創造了「一元論的二分法」這個術語,並澄清這確是基督教義的精髓,並非對《聖經》中所描述的耶穌教義的扭曲。這種一元論的二分法結合了兩種明顯相左的傾向:一為包容性傾向,這與如在普世之愛的教義中所見的自我犧牲的戲劇姿態相關聯;一為激進的堅持已見與極端排外的傾向,這與狂熱地妖魔化意識型態方面的敵人相關聯。這種對相反傾向的結合是這種二分法的關鍵性結構特徵。耶穌確實運用了前種傾向,即包容與寬恕。這種包容與寬恕超越了同族與異族的二分,也超越了聖人與罪人的二分。然而,這種

[●] 釋聖嚴,《基督教之研究》,臺北:東初出版社,1967年。

[●] 參見印順法師以下著作:〈上帝愛世人〉、〈「上帝愛世人」的再討論〉,《我之宗教觀》,新竹:正聞出版社,2000年,頁179-216、217-274。

包容與寬恕卻僅僅針對基督徒,即:僅僅適用於那些接受耶 穌權威、發誓絕對順從他的人。是否絕對服從耶穌的權威則 變為唯一的價值標準。這種徹底的二分法標準才是基督教的 終極原則,因此教義中的博愛必定會淪為次等手段:其教義 的實際效果不過是妖魔化任何不順從於耶穌之人(非基督教 徒),並對其進行譴責。

聖嚴的著作展現出:在以福音書為宗教視野的基本前 提下,以上兩種看似不相容的傾向間存在著內在聯繫,以及 這兩種傾向在這些前提下涌渦哪些方式必然地走向統一。妖 魔化意識型態方面的敵人、使群體內部與群體外部發生衝 突——這種結構被耶穌在福音書中創造並得以完善,且保持 了影響力,又因為耶穌在基督教中的威望,而被做為道德及 精神需求得到辯護。這種結構依靠現代種族主義、法西斯主 義、布爾什維克主義而存活,目激勵了這些主義的發展。這 些「主義」都在主張絕對包容的同時,構建出群體內部的團 結一致。這種團結一致又建立於:大聲譴責外部群體、創立 排外的道德訴求、將其與僅限群體內部的自我犧牲的意識型 態(或許可以稱其為「耶穌主義」)相聯繫而使之變得令人 愉悅。佛教是僅存且為數不多的、能夠以極具特色的一元論 的二分法,對這類耶穌主義(不論其偽裝與否)及其對世界 文化的持續影響進行現實、明智的評定的意識型態。在此過 程中,佛教思想為我們提供了僅存且為數不多的、與耶穌主 義不同的另種思考模式。

關鍵詞:二元論、一元論基督教、耶穌、福音書

語境傳承 -聖嚴法師的文字化禪修 **●**

李玉珍

國立政治大學宗教研究所副教授

▋摘要

本文分析討論聖嚴法師結合學術研究與禪堂制度,文字 化禪修的身體經驗。聖嚴法師影響臺灣佛教深遠,二〇五 年建立中華禪法鼓宗之前,已經成為在臺灣、美國教導中國 禪的先驅代表。作為第一位中國博士和尚與國際聞名的中國 禪師(雖然禪師並非他的自我定位),聖嚴法師嫻熟日本、 美國、中國禪的方式與傳承,深厚的學術與教禪基礎,形塑 他教導禪修的風格,特別是他使用語言的方式。

本文根據維根斯坦的語言溝通理論,探討聖嚴法師如何 教禪以及與法鼓山禪修特色。全文分為五節:一、現代臺灣 社會的禪修風尚;二、法鼓山禪堂的教育形式;三、傳統中 國叢林的禪堂與修禪;四、聖嚴法師與法鼓山禪堂;五、聖 嚴法師的語境傳承。透過法鼓山的禪法教法與制度,來呈現 聖嚴法師對中國禪法的突破;比較歷史上禪堂的禪修語言與

[●] 本文為聖嚴教育基金會支持之「語境傳承──法鼓山的禪修制度」研究 計畫部分成果。初稿於第六屆聖嚴佛學國際會議發表時,承蒙果暉法師 給予詳盡之修正,特此致謝。

訓練方式,釐清聖嚴法師接受與轉化傳統禪宗語言風格,拓展現代人修禪的入徑。有助於讀者理解法鼓山於當代臺灣禪修風尚中的特色。

關鍵詞:聖嚴法師、禪修、禪的語言、法鼓山的禪修

一、前言

本文嘗試整理分析法鼓山的禪法教法與制度,以釐清 聖嚴法師對中國禪法的突破,所以關注禪堂中使用的禪修語 言與訓練方式。作為首位博士和尚、國際認可的「中國禪師」,聖嚴法師如何結合個人修行學養,發展出禪修教育? 一九七八年聖嚴法師開始在臺灣舉辦禪七,創風氣之先。望 聖嚴法師並不自我定位為禪師,但是卻以教導禪法聞名國際,而且二〇〇五年以中華禪揭櫫法鼓宗之宗風主旨。③法 鼓山如何透過禪修教育,凝聚宗風?更確切來講,本文欲藉 分析法鼓山的禪修在現代社會的成功,探討現代人學習禪修 的方式。

聖嚴法師著作等身,其教禪結合學術研究與各種禪堂 制度,本文將聚焦於他如何教導禪法。再加上聖嚴法師圓寂 之後,法鼓山禪堂仍然使用他教導禪修的錄影帶,所以聖嚴 法師的文字言說,成為本文重點。聖嚴法師對禪宗的歷史研 究,則有待另一專文分析。寫作過程中,為探索法鼓山禪修 的現代性,又比較了傳統中國禪堂的運作、近代著名禪師如 虚雲和尚的禪修生涯,以及近年來臺灣佛教界對禪修教育的 省思與實驗。這使得本文必須處理的資料十分龐雜,寫作過 程須思考禪修許多層次,因為上述研究入徑,焦點是聖嚴法

釋聖嚴,《拈花微笑》,臺北:東初出版社,1987年,頁353-380。

[●] 聖嚴法師的國際弘法,以教導禪修為主,並且被認可為第一位漢傳佛教的禪師,相關發展請參考:李玉珍,〈禪修傳統的復興與東西交流——以聖嚴法師為例〉,《聖嚴研究》第四輯,2013年11月,頁7-34。

師「如何教禪」,而非他的「禪學思想」;其次,主題敘及「文字化」,是指聖嚴法師「如何教禪」並將其教法以及傳承的語境文字化,書面化變成教禪的系列叢書,而非指涉禪宗特有的文字觀、文字禪(除非行文特別標出)。有別於前行學者的研究,偏重思想義理的考察,罕見禪修制度與實際禪堂運作,本文嘗試將禪史、禪寺描述的禪修落實在禪堂空間,以及教導禪法的方式。

除了文獻分析,本文亦進行田野調查。筆者於二〇一四年上半年參加了法鼓山的分院禪修、自我超越禪三等相關活動,並且參加團購整套聖嚴法師的禪修教材,預備身歷其境地體驗法鼓山禪堂的運作。禪修期間對於聖嚴法師的錄影帶開示,印象深刻,所以焦點聚集於教禪的語言。聖嚴法師曾浸潤於日本、美國、中國禪的傳承,而以他親自在臺灣、美國教導禪修的體驗為關鍵,形塑其教導禪修的風格;匯合禪修傳統與特立法鼓山禪堂之處,筆者認為是他使用語言教禪的方式——本文稱之為文字化禪修經驗。◆

二、現代臺灣社會的禪修風尚

一九九○年代以來,禪修風行臺灣。許多標榜禪修的宗教團體崛起,佛教界亦出現提倡禪修的宗派——譬如法鼓山、中台禪寺、佛教現代禪菩薩僧團等。**③**以往臺灣佛教寺

院雖有少數設置禪堂,但罕有教導禪修者; ● 上述佛教團體專研禪修教義,並以制度化的禪修課程與訓練,教導僧俗二眾禪修。二○○五年聖嚴法師成立中華禪法鼓宗,揭櫫漢傳的禪宗傳統,也探究回應南傳、藏傳、漢傳的禪修法門,開啟現代臺灣禪法復興運動的巔峰。

現代佛教全球化歷程中,東西社會熱衷禪修,臺灣並非特例。繼二十世紀初,斯里蘭卡中產階級的「清教徒式新佛教」興起,到一九七〇年代歐美嬉皮時代以來,南傳、漢傳(前以日本禪、後以越南禪為主)與藏傳佛教的傳播,都回歸到禪修。這股潮流視佛教為理性與自我超越,而以禪修經驗為開拓自性的基本修行法門。由身體經驗直接入門的禪坐之風行,相對於經典浩瀚的佛學傳統之耗時費日,可能為語言隔閡之下,西方社會接觸亞洲佛教之必然途徑。但是今日各種佛經的西方翻譯漸臻完備,歐美佛學研究亦趨豐碩,禪修卻仍然是西方佛教的主流,可見禪修改變身心的力量不容小覷。此一修禪風尚甚至回流亞洲。今日亞洲佛教徒拜教育

僧俗身相限制禪修學習,人皆有禪坐悟道之平等心性,一度被視為佛教的新興團體。二〇〇三年李元松往生前剃度,改為淨土宗彌陀念佛會,朝向禪淨雙修發展。相關研究請見:溫金柯,〈現代禪對台灣佛教的影響及歷史意義——建立台灣佛教的主體性〉,《生命方向之省思——檢視台灣佛教》,臺北:現代禪出版社,1994年。http://www.masterlee.url.tw/lee/academic/t2.htm,2015/2/20。

● 天台宗法嗣曉雲法師(1912-2004)將天台止觀、般若禪列入蓮華學佛園的日課訓練,即屬少數。至於臺灣一般無僧尼駐錫的「禪寺」,並無教導禪修法門之實,而強調坐乩的通靈(以拜祀濟公為主),則反映社會對禪的另一種想像與認定。

[●] 筆者所謂「文字化」禪修經驗並非文字禪。文字禪是將文字作為禪修時 凝聚念頭的對象,文字化是指以文字詮釋展現禪修的身體經驗。

⁵ 現代禪為李元松(1957-2003)於一九九八年建立的禪修團體,提出不以

水平提高之賜,有更多機會研讀經典,卻也有更多人禪修;不 論僧俗,絡繹尋求各種禪修法門,跨越自己的文化傳統。♥

此波禪修風潮的廣度足以證明,我們面對的不是禪的宗派復興運動,而是禪修的普及運動。禪修不但由僧團的專利向一般信眾開放,禪修的立即效果更獲得各種現代知識的認證,成為信徒與非信徒提昇身心效能的活動,進入一般社會生活的範疇。舉例而言,禪修比信仰佛教更為風行。③禪修安頓身心的功能,正是現代繁忙的工商業社會渴望的生活心態。禪修紓解壓力、療癒身心、使腦力臻於平靜的敏銳,超越僧俗的修行界線,吸引各種行業與人群投入。

本文在此禪修普及的脈絡下,探討聖嚴法師如何教導現 代臺灣社會學禪。聖嚴法師設立的法鼓山禪修課程,其制度 完善與參與人數為其他臺灣佛教團體之冠,但是不以宗派局 限其中華禪法鼓宗的禪風。更重要的是,聖嚴法師累積接觸 日本禪修與在美國教禪的經驗,建立以禪修體驗實踐佛法的 實際途徑。在聖嚴法師之前,臺灣社會大眾一般談禪而不坐 禪。禪成為一種豁達、跳脫、藝術的文化遺產,甚至禪修被 視為某些特殊人群的神通稟賦。坊間有關禪的出版品,多以 經典文獻的爬梳與文學遊戲來述說禪法,放鬆身體一坐的禪 修指導,並無開放與常設的途徑可學。

聖嚴法師教導現代人禪修,大量使用文字,與其學者背景有關,也合乎現代大眾以文字認知身體的社會習慣。但是他的文字化的禪修經驗有禪堂做為後盾,並非文字遊戲,他甚至破除禪修的神祕經驗,將禪修像一般運動的鍛鍊身體,向一般人的身體開放。所以聖嚴法師的禪修教育,奠定於身體的真實性,在不斷放下、對治煩惱、漸修頓悟的學習過程中,使學員對禪修可以透過體驗來衡量。這是聖嚴法師認為禪修是教育,而非專求證悟的原因。

這樣以禪修結合個人的心的教育與大社會的教育,面對的問題是如何一致化個別禪修體驗的差異性,聖嚴法師不斷在禪修中教導基礎佛法與戒律,顯然企圖調和此一體驗差異。此一同理化的過程,即使在禪堂進行,仍然必須經過「言說」。由於一般禪堂禁語,所以禪堂傳達的觀念,必須包含文字、非語言(如影像、身體姿態)等建構的意義網絡。這種言說的效能正是維根斯坦(Ludwig Wittgenstein, 1889-1951)的溝通理論所指出的:考察人們如何理解語言時,會發現教導語言的關鍵不在解釋而是在教法。因為語言是思想與文化的產物,所以一群人得以理解某些言說的意義,不在於詞彙和文法,而是他們對符號象徵的共同期待與

[●] 有關臺灣佛教逐步與國際禪修組織掛鉤的過程,可以參考陳家倫最近對於佛教全球化的觀察:〈南傳佛教在台灣的發展與影響〉,《台灣社會學》第24期,2012年12月,頁157-162。

[●] 此一觀點在說明南傳禪修如阿姜查禪修、正念禪等,成功傳入歐美社會的原因。其實藏傳佛教亦是如此,因為禪師進入歐美者少之又少,當地社會出家者也少,教導與修習禪坐者,一般信徒勝過出家眾。有關美國佛教的發展請參考: Kenneth K. Tanaka, "Issues of Ethnicity in the Buddhist Churches of America," in Duncan Ryuken Williams and Christopher S. Queen eds., American Buddhism: Methods and Findings in Recent Scholarship Surrey (British): Curzon Press, 1999, 3-19;至於佛教回流亞洲的模式,請參見: Sarah LeVine and David N. Gellner, "Introduction: the Origins of Modern Buddhism," in Rebuilding Buddhism: The Theravada Movement in Twentieth-Century Nepal, Cambridge and London: Harvard University Press, 2005, 1-23.

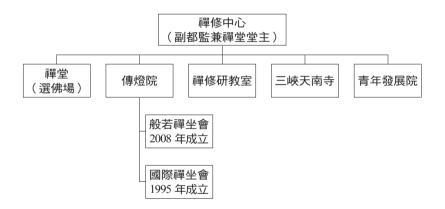
共識。
● Pierre Bourdieu 也指出宗教語言是最具有象徵權力的語言之一,使用宗教語言本身就附帶某些基礎的表達方式來馴化使用者的認知。
●

所以本文研究的聖嚴法師教禪具有空間與社群的特性, 即必須在法鼓山的禪堂上對其教導禪修的僧尼與成員呈現的 言說,而且在此階段,這些言說均來自聖嚴法師。這包含禪 堂播放的聖嚴法師錄影帶、參加禪修營隊前後發放的禪修介 紹與進階讀物,換言之,聖嚴法師教導禪法的語言與文字。 例如聖嚴法師教導禪修的書籍系列,他如何索引式地使用禪 籍,以及其他發明之處。比較坊間教禪的書籍,以及一般教 科書說明公案禪語之風格。筆者發現聖嚴法師使用公案的方 式,偏向日本現代的禪宗公案教材,不是翻譯或改寫原典, 而必加上從修行觀點的解釋。聖嚴法師擅長以佛學教育為基 礎,陶冶出百科全書式的禪宗史背景,融合傳統禪宗的機鋒 與教義,以簡單清楚的現代語言,說明禪修對現代人生活的 有效性以及入門方法。由此聖嚴法師對將禪堂信眾「所說的 話」融入他們禪修後的經驗,轉化禪堂學員的團體定位為其 宗教社群成員。綜合此種文字化禪修體驗的過程,本文的研 究立基於語境溝通的理論。

三、法鼓山禪堂的教育形式

本文以傳統/現代的禪修教育為經緯,為幫助讀者理解 禪修經驗的建構,必須回到禪堂此一空間,因此首先介紹法 鼓山的禪堂。

二○一三年法鼓山「禪修中心」組織圖: ●



主導法鼓山禪修教育的樞紐為禪修中心,禪堂堂主必須 為副都監,隸屬其下有兩個常設禪堂(總本山選佛場、三峽 天南寺)、兩個院級機構的禪修常設組織(傳燈院的般若禪 坐會與英文國際禪坐會,以及青年發展院)、一個研發禪修

[•] Ludwig Wittgenstein, *Philosophical Investigations*, Dover Publications, 1998, 2nd version, trans. By G. E. M. Anscombe. 4-5.

Pierre Bourdieu, "Authorized language: the social conditions of the effectiveness of ritual discourse," in *Language and Symbolic Power*, Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2003, John B. Thompson ed. and Intro., Gino Raymond and Matthew Adamson trans., 107-116.

[◆] 法鼓山的禪堂制度與禪修活動,感謝劉美玉協助整理,有興趣進一步理解其制度內容者,請參見氏著,〈中華禪法鼓宗的禪修教育〉,國立政治大學:宗教所碩士論文,2013年。

課程的機構(禪修研教室)。● 推廣禪修的中樞為傳燈院,舉辦基礎課程(如常設之初級禪訓密集班、初級禪訓班二日營、Fun 鬆一日禪及禪二、中級一禪訓班),並接受機關團體委託,主辦禪修指引、八式動禪等課程。傳燈院亦負責培訓禪訓班及各種課程之師資與志工,例如法鼓八式動禪(坐姿)講師培訓、初級禪訓班輔導學長培訓、禪修義工內外護培訓,以及禪修助理監香培訓、法器培訓等。各地區分會、共修處及海外各單位亦負責禪修推廣,但不隸屬禪修中心。重要的禪修培訓都必須回到金山之總本山法鼓山進行,可見這套禪修制度之嚴謹。

法鼓山各地分院設有具備禪堂功能的空間,常設禪堂則 在總本山選佛場、三峽天南寺、北投雲來寺。總本山禪堂建 築中,廣單(兩行八人禪床相對)與禪堂相連;天南寺則別 有兩棟寮房,提供雙人房給禪修者住宿。雲來寺則為行政大 樓,不提供禪修住宿,所以通常舉辦定期一天之禪修活動。

法鼓山的禪修活動是循序漸進的教育,禪修班成員必須 從一日禪、二日禪、三日禪等逐步學習。相對地,初階禪訓 多在地區分會舉辦,密集禪修才到總本山或天南寺的禪堂。 所有禪修由專責法師指導帶領。總本山選佛場以舉辦精進禪 修活動為主,亦兼負起培訓指導高階禪修指導人才——僧伽大學禪學系學生之任務。禪修活動從初級禪訓營、禪二、初中高階禪七、禪十、禪十四、禪三十及禪修教理研習營,循序漸進。**⑤**

筆者是先參加某一臺北分院的一個月基礎禪修班,每 调禪修一次,持續四週。分院的禪修班是在週間晚上(七點

❸ 以二○一一年禪堂舉辦各種活動之場次如下:

類別	初級 禪訓營	禪二	中階禪七	默照禪七	話頭禪七	話頭 禪十	中英初階 禪十四	默照 禪十四	初階 禪三十	禪修教理 研習營
場次	2	3	1	3	3	1	1	1	1	2

請參見:〈法鼓山體系組織概況〉,《2011 法鼓山年鑑》,臺北:法鼓山文教基金會,2012 年 8 月,頁 28。

- 此禪修營前身為「社會菁英禪修營」,自一九九二年開始舉辦三十屆, 停辦一年後,經過大眾反映,改為「自我超越禪修營」繼續舉辦。參加 禪修的成員背景仍以社會菁英為主,但是區域擴展自中國大陸、港澳與 東南亞的華人。
- ⑤ 當屆共一百一十位學員,三天動員的內外護法師、志工則高達一百三十名。結業後還有自成系統的每月共修,以及法行會等同儕組織的演講與佛法學習、會訊。

[●] 般若禪坐會設輔導法師一人、會長一人、專職義工一人;分為課程組、廣宣組、關懷組、活動組,協助地區及傳燈院相關禪修推廣與義工相關培訓。主要活動為:1.每年一至二次助理監香培訓及助理監香悅眾法器培訓;2.地區禪修關懷;3.帶領人培訓;4.地區禪修課程規畫;5.全省禪坐組長成長營。國際禪坐會則接引在臺灣之外籍人士,辦理英文禪坐共修等活動。

到九點)舉行,由兩位比丘尼專責法師⑥ 教導,定期約有 五十位成員參加,隔月就開一班。因為氣氛融合,又位於交 通方便的市區,所以有很多學員回鍋不斷來共修,甚至夫妻 同行。

筆者亦跳級參加「自我超越禪修營」,親自體驗三天禁 語的禪修訓練,活動日程表如下: (粗體字為筆者所加)

	第一天				
時間	活動內容				
14:00 - 16:00	報到				
16:15-16:30	觀看禪修營錄影帶				
16:30-16:45	師父開示17				
16:50 - 17:30	晚課				
17:30-18:00	藥石(晚餐)				
18:00 - 18:50	休息(沐浴)				
19:00-21:45	師父開示(介紹禪修規則及禪堂規矩、打坐)				
21:45 - 21:55	晚茶				
22:00	安板(就寢)				

第二天			
時間	活動內容		
5:00-5:30	打板(起床、盥洗)		
5:30-6:10	早課		
6:10-7:20	早齋、師父開示		
7:20-7:50	休息		
8:00-9:30	禪修指導及練習		
9:30-9:40	早茶		

- ◆ 本文提到法鼓山禪堂的法師時,原本使用禪師、女禪師之稱謂,經過果 暉法師糾正為專責法師或內外護法師。
- 「師父」原本是信徒對僧尼相當普遍的尊稱,但是法鼓山上下只有聖嚴 法師被稱為師父。初來乍到不熟悉規則的信徒,會被提醒稱呼法鼓山僧 尼為法師。這並非聖嚴法師本人制定的規則,而是僧團尊崇他為開創人 的表現。

禪修指導及練習
午齋、師父開示
休息
禪修指導及練習
午茶
禪修指導及練習
晚課
藥石(晚餐)
休息(沐浴)
師父開示
禪修指導及練習
晚茶
安板(就寢)

第三天				
時間	活動內容			
5:00 - 5:30	打板(起床、盥洗)			
5:30-6:10	早課			
6:10-7:20	早齋、師父開示			
7:20 - 7:50	休息			
8:00 - 9:30	禪修指導及練習			
9:30 - 9:40	早茶			
9:40 - 11:20	法鼓山簡介			
11:20-12:25	午齋、師父開示			
12:25 - 13:15	休息			
13:30 - 15:00	分組討論			
15:10-16:40	綜合討論			
16:40-17:00	師父總結			
17:00-17:30	藥石(晚餐)自由參加			

法鼓山禪修營的作息,除了嚴謹的早晚課與禁語,以及禪修指導與打坐之外,比較特別的是「師父開示」時間,即是在禪修時觀看聖嚴法師說法的錄影帶。第一天的 16:30-16:45 以及 19:00-21:45;第二天的 6:10-7:20、11:20-12:25、19:00-20:30,第三天的 6:10-7:20、11:20-12:25、16:40-17:00,通常

前後安排禪修指導及練習,與早、午齋和藥石聯繫,密度與頻 率之高可稱為整個禪修訓練的中心。

自我超越禪修營的活動日程,學員全程禁語。從早上五點打板起床到晚上十點安板就寢,兩天半在禪堂與寮房不准說話交流,離開營隊前的三小時討論時間,開放交談。平日生活習於用語言溝通的我們,不能說話,立即陷入溝通的僵硬期——點不點頭呢?來不來得及點頭?有時自己心裡的聲音比外界還響,又淪於自己和自己對話,而來不及點頭。由於沒有聲音,大家又穿同樣的制服,突然失去彼此的身分識別;分組討論時候,剛可以說話,聲音奇妙地還原每個人的個性、知識與專業背景,甚至國籍。聲音的辨別作用,早在自我介紹之前啟動。18 自己的差別心無所遁形。

 的話。禁語結束後的小組討論,大家不約而同地提出這個情況,結論是聖嚴法師的話有如醍醐灌頂,令人自然接語!

拜禪堂替大家準備筆記本和筆之賜,筆者盡量記下聖嚴法師的說法警句,準備回家後練習。離開禪堂回顧筆記,發現聖嚴法師的話如此引人入勝,並非完全在禪堂情境下教禪才如此,而是以非常清楚、系統的方式解釋基本佛法,簡直就是一語中的、直接了當。筆者長年教導大一新生佛學知識,經常對毫無佛學背景的學生詞窮,苦於沒有適切的表達方式。聖嚴法師如此確切得當的說明佛法與修行——譬如從自我肯定、自我成長到自我消融,足以判斷聖嚴法師此系統的有效性,以及背後累積的深厚聞思修基礎。尤其自我超越禪修營的學員皆為學有專精的專業人士,不乏律師、教師、精算師、處長、科長、媒體工作者,慣於處理大量文字,對於文字人情有一定敏感度。能夠對著螢幕隨聲應答,讚歎聖嚴法師深獲我心,情況令人咋舌!(閩南語稱作彈舌,由師生的隔空應對,更加傳神!)

法鼓山禪堂是筆者第一次接觸的「禪修中」的禪堂,以 往對於禪堂的認識不但是靜態的空間,還附屬在禪宗歷史與 公案之後,是一個沒有與實際修行聯繫起來的處所名詞。這 不表示對禪堂不敬,反而是視禪堂為神聖處所,而太理所當 然地神祕化(模糊化)此一空間的活動。為了理解法鼓山禪 堂的創新與效能,因此下文,將先梳理中國禪堂的歷史。**②**

⑤ 事先登記宿舍時,特別調查是否打鼾,以便安排室友,令筆者十分猶豫。自己會不會打鼾?如果不確定而換來鼾聲如雷的室友,反之打擾到室友呢?結果第一晚被室友吵得睡不著覺,第二晚被自己的鼾聲吵醒,這才搞懂,聽不聽得到鼾聲,是比打鼾的人早不早睡而已。因為白天禁語,腦袋裡的對話代替平常說話,連夢裡的聲音都如此清晰。

[●] 法鼓山禪堂中沒有禪師的稱謂,一律以護法法師稱之。

[●] 依照聖嚴法師的禪修經驗,應當探討日本與歐美的禪堂,這樣一來超出 筆者的負擔了,所以留待日後處理。

四、傳統中國叢林的禪堂與修禪

法鼓山禪堂的教育以聖嚴法師的教導為主,其沿襲與創新的關鍵來自他本身的禪修經驗與回顧;尤其聖嚴法師對整理漢傳佛教的禪修次第與方法,著力頗深,因此下文將回到根本,分析他在中國禪堂的經驗。聖嚴法師曾說自己因為年紀小,來不及參加當時大陸著名的禪修叢林。②來臺與留學日本之間,他先接受靈源和尚公案式的震撼,承繼虛雲禪師一系的法脈,表明其對禪修的憧憬。之後在美濃閉關六年,以禪修為定課。期間自述之禪修方式是日課、閉關與研讀禪宗經典。上述紀載顯示,聖嚴法師基本上靠自己摸索禪坐,既無禪師一對一地傳授,亦無一個公眾的禪堂生活支持。直到留日,聖嚴法師四處參訪日本禪堂,才體驗到宗派式的禪堂打坐規矩,但也都是短期接觸,他長期交流的日本禪師還是以高等學府的教授為主。不過,相對於日本宗派式禪堂的傳統綿延,聖嚴法師與其同時代中國僧尼顯然面臨到中國叢林禪修衰落的狀況。

中國禪宗的寺院型態與禪宗是否被承認為一宗派有關。 唐代禪宗被義淨律師批評為頭陀行,因為其團體基本上是一 群人聚集在某位禪修出眾的法師身旁,一起禪修、集體請 益。這些早期禪師可能獨自棲息山林岩洞之間,或者在一特 定區域內,搭建禪修茅棚,彼此照應而已。其團體組織為清修之阿蘭若,而非一般接眾授徒之寺院。宋代禪宗成為主流,禪宗寺院的叢林形式與清規亦為一般寺院襲用。但是禪堂仍為禪宗叢林的中心,有別於其他宗派的修行。於是有宋寧宗時期(1195-1225),制定禪院等級之舉,即五山十剎制度。

二〇一一年崇和法師調查了五山十剎的禪堂運作,結果 如下:**②**

(五山第一)	浙江杭州徑山萬壽禪寺	有禪堂,僅維持坐香。
(五山第二)	浙江杭州靈隱寺	已沒有禪堂,純粹旅遊寺院。
(五山第三)	浙江杭州淨慈寺	改成念佛堂。
(五山第四)	浙江寧波天童禪寺	有禪堂,僅維持坐香。
(五山第五)	浙江寧波阿育王寺	有禪堂,正規鐘板,如法坐香。
(十剎第一)	浙江杭州中天竺寺	改成佛學院。
(十剎第二)	浙江湖州萬壽寺	改成念佛堂。
(十剎第三)	江蘇南京靈谷寺	已沒有禪堂。
(十剎第四)	江蘇蘇州萬壽山光孝寺	查不到地址。
(十剎第五)	浙江奉化雪竇資聖禪寺	已沒有禪堂。水陸道場。
(十剎第六)	浙江溫州江心寺	已沒有禪堂。
(十剎第七)	福建閩侯雪峰山崇聖寺	有禪堂,僅維持坐香。
(十剎第八)	浙江義烏雲黃山雙林寺	已沒有禪堂。
(十剎第九)	江蘇蘇州虎丘山雲岩寺	僅存一塔,純粹旅遊景點。
(十剎第十)	浙江台州天台山國清寺	有禪堂,僅維持坐香。水陸道場。

[●] 聖嚴法師並未進過中國禪堂,只是每天打坐,直到留學日本才見識到禪堂的生活,因此甚至有人以為他教授的是日本禪。(〈自序〉,《禪的體驗‧禪的開示》,臺北:法鼓文化,1993年,頁1)

學和法師,〈2011部分中國禪堂概況〉,http://wenku.baidu.com/view/ 30d1f06c25c52cc58bd6beb7.html,2014/5/27。

上述十五座宋代的禪宗模範叢林,扣除找不到的光孝寺以及頹敗的虎丘山雲岩寺,迄今八座禪堂消失,其他禪堂尚存的五所叢林,四所只維持坐香活動,只有阿育王寺的禪堂「正規鐘板,如法坐香」,被認為仍然如法運作。坐香為禪宗之靜坐,因為按照燃香時間長短來計時;而開始與停止禪坐,則由敲引磬、木魚做訊號,俗稱之鐘板。 阿育王寺以「正規鐘板,如法坐香」勝過其他僅維持坐香的叢林,關鍵應該不是在坐足了時間,而是仍然維持禪坐的傳統儀式。

禪坐被規律化到早課或晚課中,但是缺乏專責禪修的常設禪堂。代之而起的是禪七,在短期內專心致志禪修,剋期收效,以求證悟。但是禪宗舉辦的禪七也被借用來念佛,稱之為佛七。這解釋了上述浙江杭州淨慈寺與湖州萬壽寺將禪堂改為念佛堂的原因。

崇和法師的調查結果與唯慈(Holmes Welch, 1924-1981)對清末民初中國佛教的調查一致,清代以禪修著名之寺院僅有阿育王寺、高旻寺、金山寺。❷ 換句話說,民國初期的僧尼很難接觸到傳統的禪堂訓練。由於聖嚴法師曾提及高旻寺與金山寺,可見他知道這兩個寺院的禪堂運作方式。因此唯慈的訪談調查非常重要。唯慈正是以江天寺(即俗稱之金山寺)為主,❷ 整理出這兩個禪寺的組織分為四大堂口(部門):禪堂、客堂(接待外客以安排內務)、庫房(收租購置等寺務)、衣缽寮(方丈管理事務的祕書處,亦掌管

❷ 坐香的禪門用語等同於靜坐,因為靜坐按照燃香時間的長短計算所致。 平時一天坐香四次,分別在早齋前後、午齋後和晚間。打七期間延長為 六次,稱之為「加香」。每坐完一支香,在兩次坐香之間跑步,稱之為 「行香」或「跑香」、「經行」。行香的方法是僧眾圍繞禪堂中心的佛 龕小跑步,四大班首和八大執事跑外圈。

❷ 釋淨慧主編,《歷代禪林清規集成》,北京:中國書店,2009年。

⑤ 分別為:釋來果,〈高旻寺規約(上)·禪堂規約〉,《歷代禪林清規 集成》第3冊,頁1-7;〈金山江天禪寺規約·禪堂規約〉,《歷代禪林 清規集成》第7冊,頁12-16;〈佛光山禪堂規約〉,《歷代禪林清規集 成》第8冊,頁371-373。

[●] 唯慈以他的中國佛教三部曲聞名學界:The Practice of Chinese Buddhism 1900-1950 (1967), The Buddhist Revival in China (1968), Buddhism under Mao (1972). 值得注意的是,當時大陸仍然未對外開放,鐵幕阻隔西方學者進入中國研究,因此唯慈的第一本書是靠訪問來臺的大陸僧侶整理出來的。此書第一章,一九八五年首先被翻譯出來——包可華譯,〈近世中國佛教制度〉,收入牧田諦亮等著,索女林譯,《中國近世佛教史研究》(臺北:華宇出版社,1985年,頁 269-357)。全書的中譯本次年出版:包可華、李阿含譯,《近代中國的佛教制度》,臺北:華宇出版社,1986年。唯慈對近代中國佛教研究的貢獻,由美國宗教研究學會(American Academy of Religion, AAR)二○一四年在聖地牙哥舉行的年會中,舉辦「Holmes Welch與二十世紀佛教研究的專題系列」,可知其開創性以及對學界之影響力不墜。

唯慈著,包可華、李阿含譯,《近代中國的佛教制度》,臺北:華宇出版社,頁3。

全寺財務)。❷ 禪堂的位置遠離上述三個堂□(稱外寮)的 干擾,好讓寺眾專心修行,所以有獨立院落。此院落由韋馱 殿照看(涌常只有大殿對而有韋馱殿),並目面對祖堂,重 要的傳戒、祭祖皆在禪堂舉行,可知為禪寺中心。29 禪堂內 部除提供行香與禪坐的空間,沿牆搭高另兩層空間。有狹窄 的樁欖(座位)供給禪僧貼單,標明他們在禪堂中負責的工 作與身分⑩;後而則有寬闊的廣單──即禪僧並排的睡舖。 廣單其實是禪僧的宿舍,通鋪上擺了衣服和櫥櫃,上空甚至 有竹竿可以晾衣服,所以白天以布幕將樁櫈與廣單隔開。❸ 禪堂的領執在貼單上註明,按照高低為:班首、維那、悅眾 (協助維那管理禪堂)、書記、香燈、侍者,以及無職的清 眾。禪堂的侍者是全寺所有職務的最低層,可以花費數年都 在禪堂,然後按部就班升上去,或者至少做一季(陰曆七月 十六日到正月十五日),然後離開禪堂到其他三個堂口領執 事。禪堂只有班首、維那有自己的寮房,其他禪堂僧眾,日 夜都在禪堂內過。禪堂成為禪僧的住處,表示禪寺是將禪修 與僧團生活結合。

高旻寺的禪堂規約顯示和金山寺一樣的設置。這份禪堂 規約共三十二條,其中六條處理「出堂」(離開禪堂),十 六條詳述該罰的行為。第一條:「鐘板參差者,巡寮跪香, 行禮不服者,出堂。」第二條:「除老病公要事外,私自逃單者,掛牌不許復住。」是最嚴重的,被趕出堂,還可能終身被取消進住禪堂的資格。唯慈的訪談調查顯示,初次進禪堂修行的僧人,因為無法忍受禪堂的生活而私自逃走的,居然高達百分之三十。由於禪堂亦對十方雲遊的僧人開放,所以這些逃離禪堂的僧人未必是高旻寺的僧眾。第八條:「住不滿期,不許出堂。除充公職外,私自告假者罰,不遵者重罰。」看來比較像為高旻寺的常住眾而設,一來雲遊僧人比較少在掛單的禪堂領執任職,另外都已經私自告假從禪堂溜出去,還會被重罰,顯然是會回到此一寺院其他單位的僧人。加上第十條:「出入不白職事者罰,止靜(上座禪修)不到者罰。」第二十四條:「有事他出,歸期失限者罰。」第二十七條:「開大靜(安板就寢)後語笑者罰。」可見高旻寺的禪僧和金山寺一樣,要求僧人在禪修期間日夜居止於禪堂。

禪堂的年度作息大致分為冬、夏、秋三季。冬期(農曆正月十六日至五月十五日)每天坐禪七次、跑香七次,共計九小時,還要加上四餐飯、三次茶、兩次小睡,負荷量很重。夏期(六月初一到七月十五日)因應燠熱的天氣,取消早上三次坐禪和三次跑香,中午加上午課,到大殿唱頌,晚修暫停,代以念佛。秋期從農曆七月十五日開始,九月十五日開始於晚上十點後增加一回靜坐,稱為加香,為十月十五日開始的禪七做準備。(平常寺院一年舉辦一、二次禪七,金山寺和高旻寺會連續舉辦七個禪七,總計四十九天。夏期禪堂人數最少,冬期次之,因為是朝山的季節,而且秋期專

³ 同註**3**, 頁 4。

³ 同註**4**, 頁 63-64。

[●] 樁櫈的另一功能,是在早課結束、等待早齋過堂的空檔中養神打盹。這 對於凌晨三點就起床的僧人,是必須的休息。同註●,頁 70-71。

① 同註**②**, 頁 64-65。

門培育新手,他們合格後,也可能就回到自己原本的寺院領職。**②**

明清的中國禪堂設置如下表 3 ,其中僧眾的座位是靠牆一字排開,不像大雄寶殿的蒲團是面對佛像成行成列,這是因為禪堂的座位是固定的,需要配合床鋪做為禪僧的住所。這種一字排列、上座下座的空間,甚至會讓禪堂中的和尚,分別面壁靜坐。

唯慈指出中國禪堂裡位階森嚴,從上面執事的座位排序 即可知,而且這種座位形式著重禪修教育。禪堂前門右方為

清眾	侍		大和尚	侍者位	清眾	
清	西		祖		東	清
			師			
眾	單		像		單	眾
西單頭			!			東單頭
書 記						
堂堂堂後西首 : 主主主堂堂座			前門		香維	主悦 悦 3 眾 眾

首座和堂主等席次,負責講解坐禪的方法,左方則是監香、維那、悅眾,負責維持禪坐進行。方丈可以開示,班首則由首座、西堂、後堂與堂主,分次開示。如果有六位班首,每天要固定開示四場,方丈通常輪值晚上那一場,每位班首兩天開示一次。資深班首開講時,資淺班首必須在場聆聽,反之則不然,資深班首要避席,因為弟子不能教師父。

唯慈的訪問也證實筆者的看法。從訪問的禪和尚中,唯 慈指出專門禪修的禪堂中要求肅靜甚嚴,開示時間也短,內 容多由當事者從語錄、公案、話頭中抽出。受訪者有的抱怨 班首的解釋模糊無用,有的認為未開悟的班首不能理解開悟 者,他們明白自己倚重的是禪坐,而且必須長時間投注禪坐

³ 同註**3**, 頁 83-85。

轉引自南懷瑾,〈禪宗叢林制度與中國社會〉,《現代佛教學術叢刊》 第90冊,臺北:大乘文化,1980年,頁357。

³ 同註**3**, 頁 80。

(三冬四夏也不夠)。這些禪子往往以虛雲和尚在高旻寺禪 七開悟為模範,但是他們並未提到禪堂的教育,因為當時滿 身病痛的虛雲並未受禪堂照料;他們欽佩的是虛雲歷經磨難 後,仍然拚死禪坐的堅持。❸

接下來的問題是:中國的禪堂如何展開教育?既然禪 堂極端要求肅靜秩序,開示又非常短暫,傳統中國禪堂如 何指導禪修?以高旻寺的禪堂規約為例,第三條「禪堂內 外,閒談者罰」、第四條「靜中響動驚眾者重罰,不服者出 堂」、第六條「不顧本分(坐禪),交頭接耳者罰」、第二 十七條「開大靜(安板就寢)後語笑者罰」,講閒話妨害禪 堂秩序要罰, 熄燈睡覺後講話吵人睡眠要罰, 都是可以理解 的。但是第七條「每當上堂小參,若有問題則出,不得亂道 (說),如違者罰。」、第十三條「不顧本參,亂逞機鋒者 罰;妄做拈頌、評論公案者罰。」、第九條「偷看典章者 罰,及非時私睡者罰。」就非常有趣了。小參本來就是要解 決個人禪坐的問題,但是不能亂問問題,因為假設禪子會故 意炫耀境界、亂提公案。這可能涉及小參會挑戰開示者,相 對令人質疑開示者(方丈和班首們)的禪修知識如何累積。 然後禁止「偷看典章」等同「非時私睡」,私自閱讀與打瞌 睡責罰相同,暗示有一定的指定閱讀和教導,但是如果私自 學習或者不願學習,則會受罰。衍生的問題會是,禪堂除了 禪坐還有別的禪學課程嗎?

我們必須回到禪宗叢林生活的脈絡來理解禪堂的「教

育」。宋元清規顯示,叢林生活包含上堂、晚參、小參、告 香、普說、入室等日常說法活動,而且還為行者設有念誦、 巡寮、肅眾、訓童行。如馮齋僧活動,施主請和尚陞座說 法。因此公案、語錄、話頭這類教材,是在禪堂以外的叢林 生活就熟悉的,淮入禪堂專慮思敬之際,自然是不用翻書 的。更進一步說,禪子已經熟悉使用公案、語錄、話頭的情 境,知道如何用心參究,足以在禪堂中與班首接招套招。這 種情況之下,知道的公案不在多而在於應用,只要能觸境旁 涌,也可以達到茅塞頓開的作用。換句話說,禪宗叢林不是 沒有經典教育,而禪堂是所學與所為針鋒相對的最後階段, 所有念頭與禪坐身體分割合一的關卡在禪堂逼出。以上述金 山寺、高旻寺嚴格的禪堂生活為例,做為一方禪修中心的設 施,每期容納來自全國各地的禪子,這兩座禪堂與叢林不必 負責教導禪宗典籍,而專注禪堂規範。因為這些禪子來自叢 林,已經具有共同的語境,來理解禪堂中引用的公案、語錄 與話頭。

[●] 筆者根據陳慧劍,《中國末代禪師》(臺北:東大圖書,1998)一書整理出虛雲早年的修行過程如下:

雲出家之初,為了家庭反對而躲到湧泉寺後山巖穴,獨自苦 行三年,等到前山告知俗家已經放棄搜尋他,才回到寺院擔 柴挑水,執事四年。這段期間,他雖然獨居坐禪,但是附近 也有熟識的禪和子,寺中僧眾也不定期地探訪,加上已經剃 度與接受執事,虛雲即使不在禪堂也是在禪坐,他被承認為 此一禪寺的成員。

奠定基礎之後,虛雲開始朝山,他的旅程以拜訪其他禪和子推薦的名師為主。他不但陸續進駐天台宗的小廟拜師,還到訪天台宗中心五台山,到各寺參與《法華經》相關的講席;之後更與高旻寺普照、歸元寺月霞與印蓮諸師,上九華

1859-1862 棄家逃到鼓山湧泉寺後山巖洞,獨自修行三年。(頁 11-12)

1862-1865 親近鼓山湧泉寺後山獨居之老禪和子古月禪師(時稱苦行第一)。(頁13)

1866-1870 又回到山巖苦行。

1870 訪天台華頂龍泉庵融鏡法師,被斥野人,命參「拖屍鬼是誰」話頭,住寺研讀《法華玄義》、《摩訶止觀》一年,「回歸佛道」。 (頁 19)

1872-1875 至國清寺學習禪門規範,方廣寺研究《法華經》,聽高明寺 敏曦法師《法華經》講席,然後出外參學。

1880 雲遊參訪至金山江天寺,親近禪宗大德觀心和尚以及新林寺大定和尚,禪坐過冬;開春到高旻寺掛單一年。

1886-1888 朝山至南五台山茅蓬,兩年間與諸師同參究。

1892-1893 與高旻寺普照、歸元寺月霞與印蓮諸師,上九華山修翠峰茅 蓬同住。由普照法師主講《華嚴經》,研習經教三年。最後一年天台 名宿聖果寺諦閑法師(1858-1932)亦趕來同住。(1913年月霞法師 於上海創辦華嚴大學)

1895 落水重病至揚州高旻寺打七,開悟經驗。

1897 四月重寧寺通智法師在焦山講《楞嚴經》,虚雲講偏座,聽眾千人。

1898 阿育王寺默庵法師講《法華經》, 虚雲附講。

山修翠峰茅蓬同住。由普照法師主講《華嚴經》,研習經教 三年。最後一年天台名宿聖果寺諦閑法師(1858-1932)亦 趕來同住。他們切磋經典知識,奠定虛雲以後能參與焦山 《楞嚴經》與阿育王寺《法華經》講席的功力。虛雲後來在 高旻寺禪堂抱傷坐禪,置之絕地而身心脫落,出現悟境,也 曾在講席上入定九天,驚動西南佛教界。他的禪師形象具有 深厚的學力,而此能力來自與其他僧人參學共修,所以此處 之朝聖並非獨自參拜聖山而已。

不可諱言,虛雲禪師的形象來自他屢屢以入定來擔當磨難,或者在磨難之後,反而在禪坐上獲得極大的進境。虛雲禪師屢屢奔波在路途上,為他擔負的禪宗叢林募款,或者憑藉其神聖禪師的身分,與其他高僧大德嘗試對抗政治人物與軍閥,保全佛教,但是構成其大禪師形象的基礎,還是他的禪坐境界。而且有趣的是,除了高旻寺之外,他並不在禪堂入定,而經常在山野洞窟、茅棚中禪坐入定。他的成功,不僅在於提昇禪師形象,更將禪坐的神祕經驗提高到極致,但是我們不該忽略,虛雲做為復興禪宗叢林的一代祖師,奠基於法脈傳承。後人過度神祕化虛雲的禪修經驗,甚至添加禪教分離的刻板印象,往往忽略他汲於復興禪宗的重點在重整禪堂,而非提倡個人離群索居的禪坐。基本上,禪堂關係著禪宗傳承的延續。

五、聖嚴法師與法鼓山禪堂

前文介紹現代與傳統的禪堂教育與設置,可知法鼓山禪堂的運作,與聖嚴法師早年浸潤的中國禪堂文化,至少在空

間、學員與教法上不同。第一,從禪堂的空間安排,即可理解法鼓山禪修教育的改變。傳統的禪堂是禪僧修行與生活的重心,禪座連床,日夜肅靜。筆者未曾參訪過埔里中台禪寺的禪堂空間,但是佛光山的禪堂即採取傳統的空間設置,四周設座。他們甚至將禪修的座位設計成上面有頂、後面有廂房的獨立洞窟型,晚上座位後簾子放下,往後一躺,即是個人睡鋪。隸屬天台宗的蓮華學佛園禪堂,禪座也是沿著禪堂四周牆壁設置,禪座的蒲團下設有矮櫃,可以收放禪坐者的雜物,禪堂中間整個空出來跑香用。禪修者白天上座,晚上可以擺開睡袋,睡在禪堂中間的地板上。法鼓山的禪堂比較像西方禪修道場,類似講堂,禪修眾分兩列數排面向講壇,在席地蒲團上禪坐,沒有固定住的椅座,也把床位安置到與禪堂相連的宿舍中。

第二,法鼓山禪堂最關鍵的差異是對四眾開放,傳統的禪堂是不對俗人開放的,因為中國禪堂是鑲嵌在僧團寺院生活中。臺灣的僧團如佛光山、中台禪寺不是不教導居士禪修,但是他們中心的禪堂對俗人開放比法鼓山晚。佛光山於開山第三十五年(一九九七)封山,召回僧尼進行四十九天的七次禪七進修;中台禪寺各地分院都開設禪修課程,但是其埔里總本山的禪堂為培植禪修師資,並不輕易對外開放。另外,傳統中國禪堂甚至罕見對尼眾開放,法鼓山的比丘尼卻可以教導與研究禪修,構成法鼓山的特色。每

第三,教法上,聖嚴法師在禪堂裡說法開示,容許以

文字教導身體禪修。法鼓山禪堂中安排觀看聖嚴法師的錄影帶,以及護法法師親自指正身體姿勢,還發給學員禪訓班手冊,供給學員結訓後在家禪坐之用。再加上聖嚴法師的一系列禪修指導書籍,換句話說,學員不但在禪堂透過文字學習禪坐,而且還可以透過出版品,回家繼續坐禪。法鼓山分院甚至設立課程,讓學員能一起研讀這些禪修書籍。

法鼓山的禪訓班手冊以《聖嚴法師教禪坐》做為基礎,輔以《法鼓全集》第四輯禪修類、法門指導類。以《聖嚴法師教禪坐》為例,內容分成:禪修方法指導、一般佛法開示、禪修的功能,還包含「自我肯定、自我提昇、自我消融」、結營前的綜合討論、法鼓山自我超越禪修營活動日程表、法鼓立姿八式動禪。是一套透過文字準備禪坐,同時以文字記錄禪修過程的描述。

《法鼓全集》第四輯禪修類、法門指導類,基本上是百 科全書式的著作,其內容摘要如下:

「一系列有關禪宗的典籍、修行的方法和開示。由其中可明瞭佛教修行禪定方法的一個大概,可以見到法師對禪的思想、禪的生活、禪的理念的詮釋,並以歷史的角度,介紹了「禪的源流」、「中國禪宗的禪」、「從印度禪到中國禪」,並在《禪門修證指要》中,介紹禪門的重要文獻之中有關修證內容及修證方法。在《禪門驪珠集》中,法師更摘取了一百一十一位禪師的行誼及其修證體驗,以之做為後進禪者們的典範。」

③

^{⑤ 高旻寺是特例,為中國唯一對尼眾開放的禪堂,並且曾經引起一番論辯。}

^{参見:陳果旻,〈《法鼓全集》編後語〉,《法鼓全集總目錄》,臺北:法鼓文化,1993年,頁26。}

聖嚴法師接受現代學術訓練的功力,在此融入教導禪修的宗教著作中,言必有出處、有禪史、有階段、有見證,以 邏輯清楚的現代語言,鎔鑄新一代的禪宗教科書。

法鼓山的文字化禪修體驗,從認知層面來折服、開放禪坐需要的心態,將開放的禪堂與現代社會的學習經驗結合, 更將文獻傳統帶回禪堂。聖嚴法師當然逐步將公案、話頭用 到禪修,但是他同時注意禪坐者的身體立即反應。相較於嚴 峻密集的傳統禪堂作息,與每季、每年的叢林生活緊密扣 和,到法鼓山禪坐是現代人從緊湊生活節奏中特意抽離的, 禪坐、經行、放鬆、學習、休息,是一整套針對現代人身心 與耐力設計的心靈之旅。

傳統禪堂裡的和尚,可以覺悟為求證悟可參生死禪——不管病痛,沒有進境就終生禪坐到底。現代俗人進入禪堂是來印證禪修的效能,不必求證悟,甚至還要循循善誘,以禪坐對身心的益處探測信仰的底線。(例如,禪坐是科學的,不是宗教。)以菁英禪修為例,聖嚴法師的開示、以小組討論和公開解惑代替小參,是教導禪坐的最大區別。

六、聖嚴法師的語境傳承

雖然現在很難重建宋元以前中國禪堂的教導, 弔詭的是, 大量禪宗的文獻和法脈師承資料, 卻存留下來。顯示教法與禪法的分流互濟, 學習禪學與禪宗教史加上禪堂的禪坐, 期許以平日的佛法教育, 和剋期取證的禪坐, 為僧侶提供實踐的資糧和方法。

聖嚴法師做為禪師的個人魅力,必須在禪堂親炙可知,

但是這些著作,已經賦予禪堂教導禪坐的教義與歷史脈絡。 比較坊間一系列的禪修作品,聖嚴法師介紹禪修的功能奠基 於禪宗研究,系統完整而不訴諸個人詮釋。聖嚴法師扣緊禪 坐的身體經驗,風格不同於星雲法師的公案教學,以公案故 事來解決日常生活道德倫常的難題,也非現代禪李元松以熟 悉的詩詞寓意比喻,紓解禪者的心境。這種文字功力,並非 一般禪坐有成者可達。

上述差別使我們重新思考,如何定義禪宗與禪修。我們是否太倚賴如語錄、公案、話頭形成的禪宗文獻與禪史來理解禪宗,而忽略叢林禪堂中的禪坐?甚至將禪坐美化為神祕經驗,而忽略禪宗叢林生活的實際運作。因為近代禪堂裡教導禪坐,顯然是聚焦在身體體驗,甚至可以完全拒絕語言的。此處並非否認禪學之重要,因為禪宗的教義詮釋與法脈傳承,仍然必須依賴文字;只不過強調禪堂中的教法。這是惠空法師之所以在二○○○年兩岸禪修會議中,之所以提出禪宗不能念書的焦慮;他假設古德比現代人德行修行基礎深厚,所以可以如此。◆◆等者認為,是禪堂不能帶書,並非禪宗果真不立文字,是教法上有禪教分離的時序,不是禪宗不讀經典。

禪宗雖然以禪坐為主要修行法門,但並非棄絕塵世的。 禪宗史上不斷有禪師批判枯木死心般的禪坐,強調當下用

[●] 二○○○年兩岸禪學教育會議上,惠空法師混淆禪堂不能帶書以及禪宗不能讀書兩事,因此非常焦慮,而與會禪師有人答以祖師大德的悟性和學識高於我輩,所以不用讀書。兩種假設,正好反映禪坐是無法學習的神祕經驗的概念。

心,處處可見心地。這是就頓漸來談證悟,所以有閉生死觀的禪僧,也有「放下屠刀,立地成佛」的凡夫。但是就禪宗打破一切既有框架,直指本心的功夫而言,一切行住坐臥、起心動念,都是禪修,所以禪修不必限於禪堂之內。期間的差距,除了訴諸個人根器,還有菩薩戒慈悲平等濟世的教理支持。

借重維根斯坦的溝通理論,法鼓山禪堂教育之成功,奠基於聖嚴法師重塑中國禪宗公案的語境。聖嚴法師教禪的語境再造,正有兩個關鍵因素。因為佛教聖典的引用與詮釋,具有很強的索引性內容(Indexical Content)——因為佛教文類具有清楚的形式傳承,已奠定其經典與教義權威,有助於跳脫宗派限制。 而聖嚴法師教禪的語境再造本身即是一雙向過程:一方面他從自身的修行經驗「復原」歷史禪宗已經失去的語境,以為現代人創造禪修的語境;另一方面他詮釋的禪宗修行語言,也成為開創中華禪法鼓宗的特殊語境。

其次,將維根斯坦溝通理論中的私人意義網絡,由個別閱聽者擴充到特定團體的文化後,即可發現不同宗教團體對於特定經典/宗派的詮釋發聲,存在其內部邏輯。換句話說,不同宗教團體有其說法的內在文法,以凝聚與落實其修

行方式。所以當我們閱讀不同宗教團體談禪宗、教禪法的出版品時,其話語的表現方式也標示他們禪修的風格。語境內部溝通之必要,雖然不必然為說者的自覺性發明,卻有助於理解一九九〇年代以後如雨後春筍般出現的臺灣禪修風潮的團體差異。聖嚴法師的百科全書式知識基礎,以及切合現代人生活的活潑語言,創立現代禪語,不論在禪堂禪坐與後續私人進修,貼切地走出禪堂,走入社會。

七、結論

本文嘗試整理分析法鼓山的禪法教法與制度,以釐清聖嚴法師對中國禪法的突破,所以關注禪堂中使用的禪修語言與訓練方式。對於聖嚴法師的禪宗與禪修著作,仍待另一專文分析。但是從如何教禪坐到現代人如何學禪,發現聖嚴法師已經結合學術研究與禪堂制度,文字化禪修的身體經驗。用文字指引一般平均教育水準高的臺灣大眾,聖嚴法師的教法,合乎大眾以文字認知身體的社會習慣。而此文字化禪修體驗的結果,反而以身體的真實性跨越文字建構的宗派界線,才能夠建構現代的禪宗教育。重視教育,結合心的教育與大社會的教育,漸修頓悟,不斷放下、對治煩惱,回到禪宗宗風的教育。

傳統中國禪宗叢林教導禪坐,以語錄、公案、話頭,建 立其宗派修行特色,卻不准在禪堂翻書、說法開示,僅以片 段時間在禪堂小參中,由方丈與班首提示。這是虛雲和尚學 禪,要靠自己盲修苦練,以及向其他禪修者,探詢推薦名師 之故。但是法鼓山的現代禪堂,不但發展出逐步放鬆身心的

^{● &}quot;Indexical Content" 這個概念借用了 Arthur Burks 的 "Indexical Symbol",而其適用範圍則依 Stanley Jeyaraja Tambiah 由宗教符碼的延續性擴充到佛教聖傳等文類的延續性。請參見:Arthur Burks, "Icon, Index, and Symbol," *Philosophy and Phenomenological Research*, Vol. IX, No. 4, pp. 673-689,以及 Stanley Jeyaraja Tambiah, *The Buddhist saints of the forest and the cult of amulets*, London: Cambridge University Press, 1984, p. 4 & 348, note 2.

禪修法,由監香來示範與當場糾正身體姿勢,還播放非常完 整的聖嚴法師開示。

聖嚴法師圓寂後,法鼓山禪修在禪堂播放聖嚴法師的錄影帶,仍然襲用他的教導。目前法鼓山僧團謹守聖嚴法師立定的禪堂規矩,不願意釋放這些錄影帶;但是參加多次禪修營的成員大多可以發現許多熟悉的教導。因為這些錄影帶主要來自聖嚴法師指導禪修營的紀錄,有些已經整理出版,有些基本概念也在他的著作中重複出現。當然法鼓山禪修營已經根據禪修的階段性重新剪輯組織這錄影帶,但是不可否認的,參加禪修營隊的成員逐級晉陞時,他們也會大量閱讀聖嚴法師的著作——從禪修的小冊子到整套的禪門知識與禪修書籍,所以對聖嚴法師的禪修概念並不全然只來自禪堂。

參加法鼓山禪修營隊與課程的成員,他們對禪坐的認識,是由禪堂的教誨(絕大部分為聖嚴法師的錄影帶,因為禪堂禁語)與聖嚴法師的書籍,交織而成。隨著禪修進階,禪坐者修禪前後浸潤於聖嚴法師的書籍,在禪堂極度濃縮的身體經驗中不斷驗證。這種文字化的啟發,不僅構成法鼓山禪修的特色,也營造其團體語境,凝聚其共同體的歸屬感。此一語境的述說者——聖嚴法師,繼續成為禪堂的基礎,藉由禪師的身體展示指導學員的禪修體態與心態。透過禪堂與閱讀創造的禪修語境,法鼓山藉由文字創造了現代禪宗的傳承。

參考文獻

- 李玉珍,〈禪修傳統的復興與東西交流——以聖嚴法師為例〉, 《聖嚴研究》第4輯,臺北:法鼓文化,2013年,頁7-34。
- 法鼓山年鑑組,《2011 法鼓山年鑑》,臺北:法鼓山文教基金會, 2012 年。
- 南懷瑾,〈禪宗叢林制度與中國社會〉,《現代佛教學術叢刊》第 90冊,臺北:大乘文化,1980年,頁357-374。
- 唯慈(Holme Welch)著,包可華譯,〈近世中國佛教制度〉,牧田 諦亮等著,索女林譯,《中國近世佛教史研究》,臺北:華宇 出版社,1985年,頁 269-357。
- 崇和法師,〈2011 部分中國禪堂概況〉,http://wenku.baidu.com/view/30d1f06c25c52cc58bd6beb7.html,2014/5/27。
- 陳果旻,〈《法鼓全集》編後語〉,《法鼓全集總目錄》,臺北: 法鼓文化,1993年,頁26。
- 陳家倫,〈南傳佛教在台灣的發展與影響〉,《台灣社會學》第24 期,2012年12月,頁157-162。
- 陳慧劍,《中國末代禪師》,臺北:東大圖書,1998年。
- 溫金柯,《生命方向之省思——檢視台灣佛教》,臺北:現代禪出版社,1994年。
- 劉美玉, 〈中華禪法鼓宗的禪修教育〉, 國立政治大學: 宗教所碩 士論文, 2013 年。
- 釋淨慧主編,《歷代禪林清規集成》,北京:中國書店,2009年。
- 釋聖嚴,《拈花微笑》,臺北:東初出版社,1987年。
- 釋聖嚴,《禪的體驗,禪的開示》,臺北:法鼓文化,1993年。
- Bourdieu, Pierre, "Authorized language: the social conditions of the

effectiveness of ritual discourse," in *Language and Symbolic Power*, Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2003, John B. Thompson ed. and Intro., Gino Raymond and Matthew Adamson trans., pp.107-116.

- Burks, Arthur, "Icon, Index, and Symbol," *Philosophy and Phenomenological Research*, Vol. IX, No. 4, pp. 673-689.
- LeVine, Sarah, and David N. Gellner, "Introduction: the Origins of Modern Buddhism," in *Rebuilding Buddhism: The Theravada Movement in Twentieth-Century Nepal*, Cambridge and London: Harvard University Press, 2005, pp. 1-23.
- Ryuken, Duncan Williams and Christopher S. Queen eds., *American Buddhism: Methods and Findings in Recent Scholarship*, Surrey (British): Curzon Press, 1999, pp. 3-19.
- Tanaka, Kenneth K., "Issues of Ethnicity in the Buddhist Churches of America," in in Duncan Ryuken Williams and Christopher S. Queen eds., *American Buddhism: Methods and Findings in Recent Scholarship*, Surrey (British): Curzon Press, 1999, pp. 3-19.
- Tambiah, Stanley Jeyaraja. *The Buddhist saints of the forest and the cult of amulets*. London: Cambridge University Press, 1984.
- Welch, Holme. *The Practice of Chinese Buddhism 1900-1950*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1967.
- Welch, Holme. *The Buddhist Revival in China. With a section of photos* by Henri Cartier-Bresson. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1968.
- Welch, Holme. *Buddhism Under Mao*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1972.
- Wittgenstein Ludwig. *Philosophical Investigations*, Dover Publications, 1998, 2nd version, trans. By G. E. M. Anscombe.

The Indexical Communication in the DDM Comunity:

Venerable Shengyan's way of verbalizing Chan Discipline

Yu-chen Li

Associate Professor, The Graduate Institute of Religious Studies, National Chengchi University

Venerable Shengyan has attracted many people to practice meditation for his capable expresses the experience of meditation by precisely words, based on his academic training and the DDM institutionalized system. Shengyan affected contemporary Taiwanese Buddhism by funding DDM as the Chinese Chan of Dharma Drum School in 2005, as well as for his devotion to promote Chinese Chan practice in Taiwan and USA. Having been explored in the Japanese, American, and Chinese meditation traditions, he has been known as the first Chinese monk with a doctorate degree and the pioneer Chinese Chan teacher. I will argue, Shengyan has formulated his style of Chan instruction, especially in terms of his language style.

According to the communication theory of Ludwig Wittgenstein, I will analyze how Shengyan adopted traditional Chan terms and endowed them with contemporary accessibility in modern language. This paper is divided into five sections: (1) the contemporary interests of meditation in Taiwan; (2) the education system of DDM Chan Hall; (3) the discipline of traditional Chinese Chan Hall; (4) Shengyan's teaching at DDM Chan Hall; (5) the communication and transformation of Chan language. I will discuss the role of DDM Chan by investigating Shengyan's indexical usage of Chan texts and his innovation.

Key words: Shengyan, Chan, Chan Language, DDM Chan Teaching

Edifying Words:

Analyzing the Rhetoric of "Education" in Sheng Yen's Thought

Seth Clippard

Assistant professor, Department of Applied English, Hung Kuang University

Abstract

"The Three Types of Education" (sanda jiaoyu 三大教育) are an integral part of Sheng Yen's system of campaigns that all merge in the nexus of "building a Pure Land on earth." Nonetheless, these three types of education all have different foci and address different audiences. On this basis alone, given that audience is a central concern to rhetoric, we can assume that there is a rhetorical difference between these three types of education, or at least that we can differentiate what is meant by education in these three cases. Another factor to consider is that Sheng Yen's general audience to which his notion of education was addressed is primarily (if not totally) Taiwanese. Finally, Sheng Yen's uses of education must be set in the context of the renewed emphasis on education beginning with Taixu and the advent of humanistic Buddhism as well as the changing demands of the educational system in Taiwan in the latter half of the twentieth century.

This essay examines the discourse of education in the thought of Taiwanese Buddhist leader Sheng Yen, in particular, how he uses education to promote educational reform in the sangha, a greater understanding of Buddhism among lay Buddhists in Taiwan today, and his vision of "building a Pure Land on earth."

The notion of "interdiscursivity" as put forth by Norman Fairclough will help us to understand how education functions as

・92・ 聖嚴研究 Edifying Words・93・

a metaphor and institutional concern in the broader scope of Sheng Yen's thought. The benefit of using this perspective is two-fold. First, we will be able to see better how the various aspects of Sheng Yen's teaching interact and contribute to a common understanding of Buddhist practice, while remaining textually separate. Second, an interdiscursive perspective helps us place the various discourses of education itself and question whether they are elements of one discourse, or in fact, separate discourses. It will provide a basis to explore what education means in the Chinese religious sphere and how we are to understand the goals of education."

Key words: Sheng Yen, education, rhetoric, Dharma Drum Mountain, Pure Land, Humanistic Buddhism

1. Introduction

Master Sheng Yen 釋聖嚴 was a prominent Chinese Buddhist leader, who strove to reintroduce the Chinese Buddhist tradition and, in particular, Chan to contemporary society, not only in Asia but throughout the world. In his first autobiography, *A Journey of Learning and Insight*, he states:

Ordinary people treat Buddhadharma as something secular or mystical; at best they treat it as an academic study. Actually, Buddhism is a religion that applies wisdom and compassion to purify the human world. Thus, I vowed to use contemporary ideas and language to introduce to others the true meaning of the Dharma that was forgotten, and revive the spirit of Shakyamuni Buddha (xi-xii).

In this paper I would like to examine one of the main ideas that Sheng Yen uses to realize this goal of introducing the true meaning of Buddhism through contemporary language: education. I begin by placing Sheng Yen's interest in education in the context of monastic and secular educational reform in 20th century China and Taiwan. This historical context will help us understand the importance of his own education on his developing views of Buddhist education. Then, I will explore how Sheng Yen uses the idea of education particularly in his "three great forms of education" (三大教育) campaign. I will look at how he uses education rhetorically to complement and to some degree unify his teachings on spiritual environmentalism, Chan, and traditional Buddhist notions of compassion (慈悲) and wisdom (智慧). In my analysis, I will employ facets of Critical Discourse Analysis (CDA) as articulated by linguist Norman Fairclough. Fairclough's notion of 'interdiscursivity' highlights the relationships among concepts and terms that are both catalysts for and indicators of social change.

・94・聖嚴研究 Edifying Words・95・

2. Historical Context

2.1 Buddhist education and education in Buddhism

The contemporary project being carried out by many Buddhist groups in Taiwan of promoting education has roots in the changes that took place in early Republican China, but some roots can be traced back much further into Buddhism's history in China. Erik Zürcher notes the ways in which the *sangha* developed during the Tang dynasty and refined its system of monastic education, as well as the efforts made to educate the laity at the grass-roots level. He also emphasizes that viewed from a broad perspective the influence of Buddhism on education lies in its emphasis on the necessity of charity (22).

Moving into the 20th century, Vera Schwarcz identifies the changes in educational reform that were linked with the modernization project in Republican China. Cai Yuanpei 蔡元培 (1868-1940) and others sought to reform the university system in China modeled on Western universities and earlier reforms in Japan. Cai advocated an "education for a worldview" (shijieguan jiaoyu 世界觀教育) (Schwarcz, 48-49). This approach to education provided a basis for universities to serve as centers of social activism. Even in the Buddhist sphere, educational reforms were being carried out in local contexts, revising pedagogy and expanding the scope of education (Pittman, 55). This can be juxtaposed with the changes in Buddhist education that Welch records in China prior to the Cultural Revolution (Welch, 159-164).

Sheng Yen was influenced to some degree by this tradition of education reform begun by Taixu 太虛 (1890-1947), following the secular reforms that took place during his life in China. Part of Taixu's reforms addressed improving monastic education. Taixu's most famous efforts in this area were his seminaries. But his education reforms extended beyond the *sangha*. Due in part to the influence of May Fourth, Taixu's scheme of reform garnered the attention of reform-minded monastics and laypeople alike. Taixu advocated a holstic form of education that trained global citizens,

and he conceived of this education being the goal of a new, international university (Pittman, 191-92).

Another modern figure whose work has been central to the renewed emphasis on monastic education in Taiwan and China is Ven. Yinshun 釋印順 (1906-2005). Yinshun's influence on Buddhist attitudes towards education can be felt in the orientation of monks and nuns toward Buddhist studies as a corollary to Buddhist practice. In addition, his works have served as one of the primary sources of Buddhist studies in Taiwan over the last 30 years, in part because "no other scholar writing in vernacular Chinese had ever examined the Buddhist canon so systematically and comprehensively" (Li, 190). Yinshun's works have been respected among monastic and lay scholars alike for the critical perspective that Yinshun adopts in working with historical materials.

Both Taixu and Yinshun's stress on education as a key to the development of a Buddhism for this world or humanistic Buddhism has been carried forward in two of the largest Chinese Buddhist organizations—Tzu Chi 慈濟功德會 and Fo Guang Shan 佛光山. A disciple of Yinshun, Zhengyan 釋證嚴 (b.1937) founded Tzu Chi in 1966. Education is one of the four missions of Tzu Chi. While there is emphasis on educating the whole person, most of the literature on the various Tzu Chi websites demonstrates an emphasis on the importance of morality in childhood education.

Moreover, the Tzu Chi educational mission has been developed in response to the lack of moral education in the secular educational system in Taiwan, a lack which it has attempted to remedy through establishing primary and secondary schools in Taiwan and abroad (Huang, 273-274, 280). As with other Tzu Chi missions, the Buddhist character of its educational mission is firmly rooted in

[•] See Tzu Chi website http://tw.tzuchi.org/en/index.php?option=com_content&vie w=article&id=293&Itemid=283&lang=en and http://education.us.tzuchi.org/index.php/2013-01-21-22-24-02/educational-concept-tw.

・96・聖嚴研究
Edifying Words・97・

Zhengyan's own teachings, the most commonly known being the "Still Thoughts Aphorisms."

Like Tzu Chi, education is one of four objectives the organization Fo Guang Shan (FGS) is based upon. ② Xingyun 釋 星雲 (b. 1927), founder of FGS, has spoken of education as central to his organization's mission to promote humanistic Buddhism. While it might appear that FGS's global educational influence is not as widespread as Tzu Chi's, it is arguably more multifaceted. For instance, FGS has a well-developed system of monastic and lay religious education in addition to its secular educational endeavors. FGS's educational mission does not stop at seminaries and schools. but extends into Chinese culture through a clear linkage between Buddhist and Confucian values (Chandler, 133-134; 236-238). Like Master Sheng Yen, Master Xingyun sees education as exerting a modernizing force on Buddhism and helping to make Buddhism relevant in contemporary society. But as Stuart Chandler points out, "The primary pedagogical challenge that Foguang clerics face in both their own education and that of lay devotees is how to make Buddhist teachings relevant and accessible without diluting their profundity and transformative power" (130). This challenge is perhaps not as relevant in the case of Tzu Chi, since Tzu Chi focuses its educational ideas on the specific teachings of Ven. Zhengyan. This challenge, though, is clearly at the forefront of Sheng Yen's approach to education, as we will see.

2.2 Morality in education in Taiwan

Another aspect of the social and historical context of education relating to the development of Sheng Yen's educational ideas is the concern with moral education throughout Taiwanese society. Sheng Yen came to Taiwan in 1949 enlisted in the Republican military. He left the military in 1959 and returned to monastic life. Over his monastic career, Sheng Yen maintained the belief that religion

could and should make a positive contribution to society. Following in the footsteps of Taixu and Yinshun, Sheng Yen thought deeply about how to promote Buddhism so that it would be of the most benefit to society. His later formulation of the vision of DDM—"to uplift the character of humanity"—suggests that moral education is perhaps the area in which Buddhism can have the deepest impact. He was not alone in wanting to promote moral development, however.

The government of the ROC under Chiang Kai-shek and later leaders made moral education an important aspect of the national education system in Taiwan. Moral education was viewed as a way to cultivate good and loyal citizens (Chyu, 134-135). One cornerstone of this type of education was Sun Yat-sen's "Three Principles of the People." Another inspiration for moral education in Taiwan was Confucianism. The Confucian influence led to moral education being viewed as a process of self-transformation (Chyu, 132-33). The ROC government was a major factor in reviving Confucianism to promote social morality and cultural identity from the 1930s onward. Traditional Confucian morality was promoted in Taiwan's schools beginning in the 1960s. 3 Christian Jochim gives two reasons for this choice: Confucianism is considered part of a shared Chinese cultural heritage, and this allows the government to avoid promoting either Daoism or Buddhism at the expense of the other (61). In addition, the Confucian text Great Learning (daxue 大學) provides a model whereby individual moral development proceeds outward towards a concern for the family and then the state. This centrifugal movement of concern allows the government to encourage patriotism and loyalty as part of a person's moral development.

² See the FGS website https://www.fgs.org.tw/en.

[•] For a discussion of Confucian education in Chinese history and the prospects of incorporating a Confucian program of learning into educational curricula today, see Wm. Theodore de Bary, *Confucian Tradition and Global Education* (New York: Columbia University Press, 2007), 13-21.

・98・聖嚴研究 Edifying Words・99・

Another phenomenon that contributed to the religious milieu of moral education were the morality books (shanshu 善書) that had been part of Chinese culture for centuries. Philip Clart notes in his study that the books are critiques of social disorder and appeals to Confucian moral principles (Clart, 86-87). However, they do not simply call for a return to tradition, but a reinterpretation of tradition, even if that means abandoning traditional institutions (Clart, 94). Morality books show "that the 'Taiwan Experience' of the postwar years has produced a form of religious traditionalism that reinterprets tradition in a highly flexible manner and constructs new identities, not against, but within and for a modern Taiwanese society" (Clart, 95). This assessment of Taiwanese religion and morality is useful in understanding Sheng Yen's own reinvention of education as part of a discourse on morality and a rhetorical strategy to promote both a renewed understanding of Buddhism and reorientation towards education in Taiwan.

2.3 Sheng Yen's education

Jimmy Yu points out that many events in Sheng Yen's life contributed to his understanding and use of education as a concept and term to redefine or revitalize Chinese Buddhism and Chan. Sheng Yen had very little in the way of early formal education. During his early years as a monk, he had the opportunity to receive a basic monastic education at Jing'an Buddhist Seminary. He says that this period was crucial to all his later accomplishments, even though it was a short five and a half years (*Journey*, 14-17; *Footprints*, 56-59). But he criticizes the rote memorization of scriptures and business of conducting funerary rites that he witnessed at other temples during this time.

He later obtained an MA and PhD in literature from Rissho University in Japan, all the while still learning Japanese. His experiences in Japan also contributed to his conviction that the future of Chinese Buddhism was tied to education. In Japan he saw that there was no separation between studying Buddhism and practicing Buddhism. He notes that many monks in Japan

go abroad for higher education and are able to promote a more sophisticated knowledge of Buddhism within the *sangha* and among the laity (*Footprints*, 166).

Sheng Yen was the first Taiwanese Buddhist monk to earn a degree overseas (although Ven. Yinshun was earlier awarded an honorary degree for his history of Chan). This point is often mentioned in DDM literature, but it marks a unique transition in the revival of Chinese Buddhism. Now, the degree to which monastics matriculate through higher education can be considered a distinguishing feature of humanistic Buddhism. Other organizations have also followed this path of encouraging monastics to do graduate study in Japan, North America, and Europe. Chandler points out that Xingyun has sent many of the senior monastics in FGS to earn graduate degrees. Even though there is some difference in opinion about the importance of this, Xingyun believes this kind of education is necessary to the revival of Chinese Buddhism. Monastics who have earned higher degrees from overseas universities bring prestige to the *sangha*, elevating the status of the sangha in society (see Bocking, 232-33). This perspective reflects similar concerns of the sangha during the Tang dynasty (Zurcher, 19-20). In addition, there are monastics who take tonsure after having earned PhDs. While in some cases these degrees are not related to Buddhism, the individual's expertise is often seen as an asset in finding new ways in which Buddhism can contribute to society.

3. Rhetoric of Education

3.1 Education as the Central Focus of DDM

Education has been an integral part of Sheng Yen's vision for Buddhist renewal since some of his earliest writings. His concern about education is, in one respect, part of a trend among Buddhist modernizers going back to Taixu. Sheng Yen's initial interest in education began with advocating reforms to monastic education. Donald Pittman identifies a number of ways in which Sheng Yen

・100・ 聖嚴研究 Edifying Words・101・

carried on many aspects of Taixu's reformist vision (281-83). Sheng Yen's focus on education is not too different from Taixu's own goal to reform monastic education and efforts to forge a universal higher education.

Sheng Yen's early essays on education relate to Buddhist education, meaning education of monastics. From the early sixties, Sheng Yen's concern with the future of Chinese Buddhism is often expressed through his concern for developing an educated sangha. The importance of a well-educated sangha was also reinforced by his time in Japan, which he noticed contrasted starkly with the religious milieu in Taiwan. He also addressed this issue in a series of essays written in 1988 (see Education, 141-55). The lack of education is a result of monasteries being disconnected from larger society, and with a lack of education the superstitious/ escapist image of Buddhism became more prevalent. Sheng Yen wrote several essays that seek to shed light on the conditions that led to the image of Buddhism and the sangha to be degraded in society (Journey, 42-44). Focusing on education as a key to reviving Chinese Buddhism, the goal of education then becomes the creation of a fertile ground out of which Buddhist leaders can emerge to represent and promote Buddhism throughout the world. This is not an evangelical vision; but rather, it reflects Sheng Yen's intent to have Buddhists be informed and articulate representatives of the tradition as a way to remedy the stagnant Buddhist clergy and laity, which was more the norm from the early Republican era on. He later expanded the scope of his concern to include a welleducated, Buddhist-educated laity.

In 1961, Sheng Yen published essays in *Humanity* magazine discussing the meaning of "Buddhist education" (*fojiao jiaoyu* 佛教教育). He defines education according to the meaning of two characters "*jiao*" 教 and "*yu*" 育:"*jiao*" meaning to teach or instruct and "*yu*" meaning to cultivate (*Education*, 23). Based on Sheng Yen's reading of this term, education implies *moral* cultivation. He links this idea of education as moral cultivation to religious education in general, for which the ideal goal is to

develop an attitude of humility and equanimity, or work to embody "truth, goodness, and beauty" (zhen shan mei 真善美). According to Sheng Yen the religious tradition most directed towards this goal is Buddhism for the basic reason that it begins with the cultivation of the self. To study Buddhism, in the sense of undergoing cultivation, is based on morality, concentration, and wisdom, the first among these being moral cultivation (Education, 32). The purpose of beginning with moral cultivation is in part due to the status of Chinese Buddhism at the time Sheng Yen was writing. At a National Development Commission meeting in 1975 in Taiwan, Sheng Yen made three proposals: "1) to bring religious education into the university system, 2) to be aware of the reorganization of "green light zones" i.e. brothels, and clear up underworld society of gangsters through social education, 3) spiritual education which means dual development of humanity and science" (Journey, 143-144). These proposals point to an expansion from monastic education to improving education, primarily religious education, throughout society. The turbulence of the 20th century had severely limited the general understanding of what living a Buddhist life meant. So, Sheng Yen used the idea of religious education to emphasize the goal of living a Buddhist life and also to show how the revival of Buddhism in society is a process of education that begins with moral self-cultivation and extends outward towards creating a better world (*Education*, 36). • We can see in this last point a foreshadowing of his mission of creating a Pure land on Earth.

Thus, Sheng Yen's focus on education is in part an inheritance from the earlier generation of the proponents of humanistic

[●] Elizabeth Ashton, in her study of religious education among primary schools in England, makes a similar argument. She states that the goal of religious education is best conceived of as the development of five-fold search for respect (15-17). This model of religious education aids students in their spiritual, moral, and cultural development. See Elizabeth Ashton, *Religious Education in the Early Years* (London and New York: Routledge, 2000).

・102・ 聖嚴研究 Edifying Words・103・

Buddhism. However, the way in which Sheng Yen uses the term 'education' begins to change after founding Dharma Drum Mountain in 1989. The goals of crafting a Buddhism for the human realm (renjian fojiao 人間佛教) and working to establish a Pure Land on Earth (jianshe renjian jingtu 建設人間淨土), although explicit in his writings, are further reflected in Sheng Yen's desire to adapt Buddhism to fit contemporary concerns and sensibilities. Thus, the teachings and practices need to be accessible and understandable. Education is a term that everyone is familiar with, although there might be different interpretations of this term. Nonetheless, by making the goal of Buddhist teachings and practice a form of education, a wider audience can begin to identify with Buddhism. Moreover, this identification allows for new understandings of Buddhism and its role in the world to emerge. That is, for some people, education and religion are two separate things. But by identifying them like Sheng Yen does, he challenges people to reevaluate their preconceptions of both the nature and role of education and religion in their own life and in society.

3.2 The Three Great Forms of Education

Sheng Yen first put forth his notion of three kinds of education

(a) Xingyun shares a similar notion of Buddhist education. But the way he uses the term "education" differs and thus points in a different direction. In his book *Humansitic Buddhism: A Blueprint for Human Life*, juxtaposes education and entertainment. He points out that entertainment is important to spiritual life and that the Buddhist tradition has always advocated educational forms of entertainment. The goal of entertainment is to learn more about Buddhism, and educational endeavors can also be enjoyable. While the educational element of Buddhism, for laity, is the development of virtues, these are equally seen as types of entertainment. In Xingyun's discussion is seems as if the educational aspect of entertainment is important to make distinguish between Buddhist entertainment and secular entertainment. Education does not seem to be the central focus of a Buddhist's life.

(sanda jiaoyu 三大教育) in 1994. These three forms of education are:

- 1.University Education [or education through academics] (da xueyuan jiaoyu 大學院教育): aims to provide comprehensive, humanistic education to the talents for building a pure land in the human realm:
- 2.Universal Education [or education through public outreach] (*da puhua jiaoyu* 大普化教育): helps to uplift humanity through traditional cultivation and modern education;
- 3.Caring Education [or education through caring services] (da guanhuai jiaoyu 大關懷教育) promotes living in accordance with Buddhism: caring for and respecting every stage of life, promoting a compassionate and humanistic society. (Hu, 83-84, see also *Direction*, 79-80; 130-131)

He refers to these three kinds of education as the "method" by which DDM carries out its mission. This is the turning point at which he begins to use "education" with much more rhetorical force than before. He had already coined the expression "spiritual environmentalism" (xinling huanbao 心靈環保) a couple years prior. The expression "three great forms of education" gives Sheng Yen the opportunity to use the term "education" as a bridge between the religious and secular spheres. This bridging of these two realms is necessary if Buddhism is to be seen as applicable to the issues facing today's Buddhists, but also if the establishment of a Pure Land on Earth is to be held up as a society-wide ideal and not just a Buddhist one.

The division of education into three parts is of obvious interest. As is well known, Sheng Yen used lists to promote his various campaigns. • Besides being an organizational strategy,

[•] For example, the 5-fold spiritual renaissance campaign and the sets of 4 with that comprise it, the 4-fold environmentalism, and the six ethics of the mind are the most widely known.

・104・ 聖嚴研究 Edifying Words・105・

part of the intention of each of these lists is to allude to similar lists in Buddhist thought. The most obvious set of three is the three Jewels—Buddha, Dharma, and Sangha. The three forms of education can be interpreted as reflecting the three Jewels such that university education is the Buddha (since the Buddha was the first teacher of the Dharma), universal education is the dharma (since it contains the instructions on cultivation), and caring education is the Sangha (since it is the body that administers care to society).

Looking at each element separately, we see that Sheng Yen carried out the first of these, university education, though the creation of the Chung-Hwa Institute of Buddhist Studies (CHIBS) in 1985, and more recently with the founding of Dharma Drum Sangha University (2001) and Dharma Drum Buddhist College (2007). CHIBS has become synonymous with academic work on Buddhism in Taiwan. The colleges, while not the first of their kind in Taiwan, indicate that the educational mission of DDM is still firmly rooted in academic-style education.

Education through public outreach refers to Buddhist practices, such as chanting, reciting the Buddha's name, various rites and ceremonies, and especially Chan meditation. This type of education can also be referred to as cultural education (*Direction*, 135). These cultural activities include publishing, reading and study groups, conferences, volunteering, and many more.

Caring education refers to services provided to the sick and elderly through the DDM Social Welfare and Charity Foundation, disaster relief, and services provided through the DDM Humanities and Social Improvement Foundation. But there is more to this kind of education than these services. Sheng Yen states that education accomplishes the mission of caring; and caring brings the function of education to completion (*Direction*, 136). So, although caring

education is one of the three types of education, it is also the counterpart to the practice of education. Given this explanation of caring education, should we even take it to be a form of education? If so, what does education mean?

One way to address this question is to recall the gloss of education as a "common" term for what in Buddhism is called 'delivering sentient beings.' "In Buddhism, sentient beings needed to be 'delivered' or transformed, and in common vocabulary of society, everyone needed to be 'educated'" (*Journey*, 169). In this sense, the work of relieving the suffering of sentient beings can be called 'education'. Of course, all three forms of education contribute in some way to this end. Clearly the second and third forms of education are directed at relieving suffering—the former focusing on the self and the latter on others. And we might say that academic work can relieve suffering to the extent that it can provide deeper understanding of a topic, but under this reading academics comes though as the least 'educational' of the three forms.

Another way of interpreting the way these three sets of practices hang together as kinds of education is to look at the way they can be correlated to the two-fold mission of DDM. The first part is to "raise the character of humanity," to which we can apply the first two types of education. Both academics and public outreach (as spiritual cultivation) attempt to improve a person's character. The second part, "to build a Pure land on Earth," can be achieved by creating a society where people help one another. Connecting the second part of the mission to caring education, we should refer to Sheng Yen's "Chan" interpretation of pure land: "If we can offer others a feeling of serenity and security, compassion and care, then the way they experience the world will be like a Pure Land" (Chan de shijie, 331). However, just a few lines above this passage, Sheng Yen states that building a Pure land on Earth can also be achieved when any one person can go about life with a still mind. In this case, the second form of education is also related to the second part of the mission. This reading demonstrates

[•] Of course, there are other sets of three that come to mind: the "three baskets" or *Tripitika* 三藏, of *sūtra*, *vinaya*, and *abhidharma*, or, negatively, the three poisons (*trivisa* 三毒) or three marks of existence (*trilaksana* 三法印).

・106・ 聖嚴研究 Edifying Words・107・

how the second kind of education, universal education or public outreach, syntactically links academics to caring in the context of the two-pronged mission of DDM. While interesting, this should not be surprising, knowing that Sheng Yen kept Chan practice at the heart of his teachings. The connection between Chan and education obtains in other contexts, as we will see below. It is also true, although tautological, that each of the types of education are mutually concerned with the individual and society to the degree that they are kinds of education.

3.3 Education, Chan, and spiritual environmentalism

Jimmy Yu divides the development of Sheng Yen's Chan teachings into 4 stages, culminating the promotion of Chan as education (160). Yu's analysis shows how education is related to Sheng Yen's understanding of Chan. But also Sheng Yen's evolution of Chan thought was in part influenced by his persistent concern with education. In the attempt to make Chan more widely available, Sheng Yen describes it as a form of education, "Chan practice is a continual process of mending [our actions of body, speech, and mind]; it is a form of education" (cited in Yu, 169). And, as Yu further notes, this connection speaks to a perceived need in Taiwanese society during this period for moral education (Yu, 168).

In Chinese culture, education can be viewed as an individual endeavor, much like moral cultivation, but it cannot be reduced to the individual. Education is moral cultivation; it is for the benefit of society. From this perspective, the three great forms of education allow Sheng Yen to set the individual in a mutual relationship with society. Education is something that one receives, which aims to improve one's life. It can be pursued individually. But education is also something that is given. This implicates another individual, at least. Moreover, when one talks about "education," people generally conceive of an institution in society. "Education" in this sense is part of society. It is communal. These connotations and associations of education, when made to be a focus for Buddhism,

simultaneously links Buddhism to individual cultivation and to the process of social improvement. The dual implication of education as something essential to Buddhism counteracts two threats that Sheng Yen sees to the prospering of Buddhism today, these being the impression that Buddhism has no positive contribution to make to society and the lack of Buddhist teachers who know the tradition and embody it in a way worthy of respect. This two-fold association of education can be said to be true for the way *Chan* is understood by Sheng Yen. But Chan is more often first thought of as something one pursues for one's own benefit. Nonetheless, education is still nothing other than Chan, and so it is the practice of improving the quality of one's own character.

Despite this identification of Chan with education, there are times when such rhetoric does not apply. In *Renxingdao*, Sheng Yen responds to the question of whether Chan practice can help students better adapt to and succeed in a rapidly changing society (118-120). The essay recounts a suggestion that teaching secondary school students to practice Chan meditation will help them by improving their moral character. Sheng Yen responds by saying that education is complex and says that we cannot simply use Chan meditation to address this kind of issue superficially. Here education refers to a social phenomenon, and if we want to improve the condition of this phenomenon, we need to begin with improving the moral character and wisdom of educators and work out from there. When discussing education in this context, he is clearly speaking about education in a way that his audience can easily understand.

Perhaps Sheng Yen's most unique and widely used neologism is "spiritual environmentalism/protecting the spiritual environment" (xinling huanbao 心靈環保). Sheng Yen has explained this term as meaning the same thing as Chan, to a Buddhist. The goal of practicing spiritual environmentalism is to purify the mind, an idea that Sheng Yen relates to texts such as the Vimalakīrti sūtra, in which we find the passage "When the mind is purified, all Buddha lands will be purified." Juxtapose this with the goal of building a

・108・ 聖嚴研究 Edifying Words・109・

pure land on earth, and we can see that 'spiritual environmentalism' as a term encompasses the notions of traditional Chan practice and the concern with moral cultivation, which are related to social issues. It can be applied in Buddhist and non-Buddhist contexts alike.

At times, spiritual environmentalism and education are set forth as the two main missions of DDM, each corresponding to one half of the "approach" part of the common ethos: the practice of three types of education helps "to promote comprehensive education" and the four kinds of environmentalism helps "to extend loving care to all" (Hu, 84). Hu also suggests that education is the essence of DDM's mission and environmentalism is its function or manifestation (Hu 83). This is particularly interesting for the allusion to the Chinese polar concept of essence and function (*ti-yong* 體用). Aside from being a common trope in Chinese philosophical thought and Chinese Buddhist thought, Donald Pittman notes that Taixu used *ti-yong* to explicate his term "a Buddhism for human life" (174-75). However, I have not come across any reference in Sheng Yen's own writings where he suggests this connection.

3.4 Education as an original Buddhist concern

As noted in the passage cited on page one, Sheng Yen wanted to recast Buddhism in terms that people could understand and relate to. He wanted to make Buddhism fit the contemporary world and many of his teachings stand as examples of his commitment to this intention. But he was also wary of uprooting Buddhism from its past. That is, invoking the tradition of Buddhism can set Buddhism off from the number of New Religious Movements that were also vying for popular support.

As with spiritual environmentalism, Sheng Yen states that education is part of the original teaching of Śākyamuni Buddha. He refers to Śākyamuni as the greatest educator (*jiaoyujia* 教育家) (*Direction*, 112). He describes Śākyamuni's educational goal as being focused on the purification of the individual, society, and

the world. Finally, Sheng Yen points out that Śākyamuni used the human world (renjian 人間) as the backdrop to his teaching, responding to conditions in this world when offering a teaching. This last point brings us back to the contemporary world and suggests that Sheng Yen is simply trying to carry on the mission the Buddha began in working to build a Pure land on Earth. Additionally, Sheng Yen has said that from the earliest time of the Buddha, every monastery "is in fact a school" (Journey, 12). If we take this as an aspect of Buddhist tradition, then we find no more traditional place of Buddhist practice than at a monastery named "Dharma Drum Mountain World Center for Buddhist Education."

In another appeal to tradition, Sheng Yen connects education to the traditional dyad of wisdom and compassion. Sheng Yen uses these two to describe the goal and practice of education. He states:

The meaning of "buddha" is enlightenment, which is nothing other than wisdom [zhihui 智慧]. Buddhist education begins from wisdom in order to carry out the educational function of compassion...Among the four parts of the common ethos of DDM is "approach": "to promote comprehensive education and extend loving care to all." This is not only the practical approach of DDM towards education, but can also be said to be Buddhist education (Ping'an de renjian, 59).

What is the relationship, for Sheng Yen, between wisdom and compassion? He says, "Use compassion to care for others, use wisdom to take care of oneself" (*Renxingdao*, 119). By this

The "common ethos of DDM" is made up for four parts: 1) vision—to uplift humanity and build a pure land on earth, 2) spirit—to give of ourselves for the benefit of all, 3) direction—to return to the original intention of the Buddha and work for the purification of the world, and 4) approach—to promote comprehensive education and extend loving care for all. http://www.dharmadrum.org/content/about/about.aspx?sn=110, accessed 2014/4/2.

・110・聖嚴研究 Edifying Words・111・

he means that compassion gives us the foundation for helping others, and wisdom is the basis for dealing with our own difficulties. Juxtaposing wisdom and compassion with education serves two ends. First, it imbues the discourse of education with basic and traditional Buddhist concepts. This strengthens Sheng Yen's argument that education is part of DDM's mission of remaining faithful to the original intention of the Buddha. This goal is elucidated in the third of the four common ethos of DDM, referred to as the "direction" of DDM. Second, it helps illustrate how education is both an idea and a practice. Education is the development of wisdom but doesn't end there. Education is also the process of taking that wisdom and putting it into practice in the world, through caring for others. And educated person, like an enlightened person, does not pursue one or the other, but both simultaneously.

3.5 Humanistic Buddhism and culture of learning

The connection between education and moral development is not limited to Buddhism alone. Sheng Yen focused much of his writing on reviving and promoting Chinese Buddhism and Buddhism, in general. But he does not neglect the fact that, what is commonly seen as a set of Confucian values, is deeply interwoven into Chinese and Taiwanese culture and society. As mentioned above, Sheng Yen's view of education shares in this cultural worldview and it is central to how he defines "religious education" (zongjiao jiaoyu 宗教教育). Throughout his writings, he describes the effects and importance of education in ways that seem to be modeled on the Confucian classic, the *Great Learning* (daxue 大學):

A country and society is made up of people, so if the people's minds are restless, then society will be in chaos. If the society is in chaos then the country will be unstable. For the country to flourish and the people to live in peace, one must start by delivering the minds of humanity. And to deliver the minds of the humanity, one must begin with education. This

kind of education is not the ordinary lessons taught in school, but an emphasis on Buddhist faith; that is, using the concept of causes and conditions to console and encourage the minds of humanity. (*Journey*, 11; see also *Education*, 29).

Sheng Yen begins with a common blueprint that links the human mind, or xin $\stackrel{\sim}{L}$, to the world and places the burden of improving the world on the individual's ability to rectify their mind. But then he shifts the emphasis to not just Buddhist practice, but a kind education about the nature of the world informed by Buddhist concepts. Buddhist education is one form of religious education, and religious education provides a connection between all the other kinds and stages of education humans are exposed to—school, family, adult, etc. Therefore, Sheng Yen's emphasis on education does not ignore what people commonly think of as education (i.e., what is learned in school and in the process of growing up), but it places this kind of education under the higher form of religious education, which stands at the heart of individual moral development and for that reason is a crucial element in social transformation.

4. Sheng Yen and the rhetoric of transformation

It is clear that Sheng Yen wanted education to be a central part of DDM, and he has definitely succeeded in making it so. But the many ways in which he speaks about education can leave one wondering what the point is in creating these many meanings of one term, not the least since he seems to already have his own neologism, spiritual environmentalism, that has just as many referents. Is Sheng Yen's use of the term 'education' different enough from both 'spiritual environmentalism' and from the way in which other Buddhist leaders (e.g., Xingyun and Zhengyan) speak about education to warrant special consideration? I believe so. It is helpful in understanding Sheng Yen's rather academic approach to reviving Chinese Buddhism to make sense of his rhetoric of education.

・112・聖嚴研究 Edifying Words・113・

One way to understand what Sheng Yen is doing by deliberately linking various ideas is to consider it as an example of "interdiscursivity." Originally coined by Norman Fairclough. interdiscursivity refers to "the particular mix of genres, of discourses, and of styles upon which it [the text] draws, and of how different genres, discourses or styles are articulated (or 'worked') together in the text" (Analyzing, 218). Fairclough uses this method of analysis to identify the ways in which various discourses and genres work together in a text. Of particular interest to Fairclough and his program of Critical Discourse Analysis (CDA) is the role that discourse plays in social change. Fairclough's CDA is extensive and terminologically loaded. Therefore, it is not my intention to conduct a full-scale analysis of Sheng Yen's thought along the lines of CDA. But the way in which CDA views discourse as constituting reality • with repercussions for power relations within society has affinities with Sheng Yen's (albeit apolitical) mission to reframe and revive Chinese Buddhism to make it more of a social force. Another aspect of CDA that makes it useful to keep at hand is the way in which text, discourse, and social practice are all three interlinked.

Speaking in similar terms about religious discourse specifically, Robert Wuthnow states that

religious discourse is clearly a social practice—patterned

- See also chapter two of Fairclough's Discourse and Social Change and Jiangguo Wu (2011) for fuller discussions of interdiscursivity.
- I follow the Korku von Stuckrad's assessment of discourse analysis as a "research perspective" offering tools to help us understand and not a method, per se. See von Stuckrad, 14.
- See Discourse, 3.
- @ Genre, discourse, and style, referred to in the above definition of 'interdiscursivity', comprise "orders of discourse" or social practices. Fairclough emphasizes the importance of social practices as a necessary link between social events (texts) and social institutions.

by the social institutions in which it is learned and in which it is practiced, explicitly taught, and implicitly modeled so that practitioners adhere to commonly accepted rules governing the practice, internalized so that these rules often do not require conscious deliberation, and yet observable in the structure and content of discourse itself. (7)

Wuthnow's statement highlights why it is important to look carefully at Sheng Yen's discourse of education. It is reflective of the practice of contemporary Chinese Buddhism. And Fairclough's interdiscursivity offers a research perspective by which we can better understand how this discourse is built on and strengthened by a number of subtle discourses.

Sheng Yen uses discourses of individual moral and spiritual cultivation, Buddhist history, Buddhist philosophy, and social change. The combination of the first three of these is quite common and not unique to Sheng Yen. However, the effect of the combination of the specific terms Sheng Yen employs (spiritual environmentalism, education, Chan, wisdom, compassion) is the creation of a new environment in which Buddhists and Buddhist communities can construct and develop their identity. It is a concept laden with cultural value in Taiwan and China, but also a symbol of modernity, culture, and prosperity. These are all messages that Sheng Yen wants to send regarding Chinese Buddhism. His goal of revitalizing Chinese Buddhism and raising its stature and influence requires both a continuous improvement of the educational quality of those teachers charged with promoting Buddhism throughout local and global communities. This is indeed a massive undertaking. So Sheng Yen deepens and broadens the scope of education through an interdiscursive approach, which also seeks to provide many contexts in which people can identity with the mission of DDM. For people who are seeking to make a positive contribution to society and care for others, Buddhism as education is the work of learning about and understanding where suffering occurs and learning ways to reduce that suffering of ・114・ 聖嚴研究 Edifying Words・115・

others. For those with a desire to learn about Buddhist history and concepts, Buddhism as education is the pursuit of academic degree or the study of one aspect of Buddhist philosophy or a particular teaching. For those who find themselves seeking methods of self-cultivation, Buddhism as education is the development of skills for calming the mind, facing life's challenges, i.e., Chan practice. The common theme amongst all these interpretations, though, is transformation, whether it is intellectual transformation, spiritual transformation, or social transformation.

Education, by itself, implies both a process of personal development and a social program. In both contexts it is transformative. And additionally, these many meanings of education in the Buddhist context are neither static nor mutually exclusive. Although they can be sorted according to genre or discourse type (social concern, institutional education, spirituality, meditation, history, philosophy), they can also be arrived at from and reflected in any of the other discursive styles.

Sheng Yen works education into his system in a way that presents education as a specific remedy for an ailing Chinese Buddhism. We can see from his earlier writings that he became aware of education as a problem in Buddhism based on the lack of qualified and well-trained monastics who were capable of transmitting the dharma. But he links education to many other types of practice, traditional and contemporary alike. From this concern he decided that education should be a key element in the revival of Chinese Buddhism in the modern age. Along the way, education becomes a symbol of and method for transformation. It is this basis in transformation that gives education a resonance with spiritual environmentalism, Chan, and Chinese values. In order to make education have an effect, he diversifies what education means. This diversification challenges our typical understanding education and invites us to see education in ways that we previously had not considered. Approaching Sheng Yen's rhetoric of education through the lens of interdiscursivity also enables us to move the analysis forward by analyzing the various media used by DDM to promote

its multifaceted program of education. Ultimately, Sheng Yen makes education a hermeneutic for thinking about what Buddhism means today and could mean in the future.

・116・ 聖嚴研究 Edifying Words・117・

Bibliography

- Ashton, Elizabeth. 2000. *Religious Education in the Early Years*. London and New York: Routledge.
- Bocking, Brian. 2005. "Buddhist Studies and the Study of Religions," in *The Role of Buddhism in the 21st Century: Proceedings of the Fourth Chung-Hwa International Conference on Buddhism*, ed. Ven Huimin Bhikkhu. Taipei: Fagu wenhua. 225-261.
- Chyu, Li-ho, and Douglas C. Smith. 1991. "Secondary Academic Education," in *The Confucian Continuum: Educational Modernization in Taiwan*, ed. Douglas C. Smith. New York: Praeger. 99-165.
- Clart, Philip. 2003. "Chinese Tradition and Taiwanese Modernity: Morality Books as Social Commentary and Critique," in *Religion in Modern Taiwan: Tradition and Innovation in a Changing Society*, eds. Philip Clart and Charles B. Jones. Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press. 79-96.
- De Bary, Wm. Theodore. 2007. *Confucian Tradition and Global Education*. New York: Columbia University Press.
- Fairclough, Norman. 1992. *Discourse and Social Change*. Cambridge: Polity Press.
 - 2003. Analyzing Discourse: Textual Analysis for Social Research. New York: Routledge.
- Ven. Hsing Yun. 2008. *Humanistic Buddhism: A Blueprint for Human Life*. Trans. John Balcom. Hacienda Heights, CA: Buddha's Light Publishing. Kindle edition.
- Huang, Huang-Ping and Lian-Hwang Chiu. 1991. "Moral and Civic Education," in *The Confucian Continuum: Educational Modernization in Taiwan*, ed. Douglas C. Smith. Praeger: New York. 367-434.
- Huang, Julia. 2007. "Buddhist Education and Civil Society in Modern Taiwan: Notes from the Buddhist Compassion Relief Tzuchi Foundation's Mission of Education," in *Development and Practice of Humanitarian Buddhism: Interdisciplinary Perspectives*, eds. Mutsu Hsu, Jinhua Chen, and Lori Meeks. Hualien: Tzu Chi University

- Press. 269-283.
- Jochim, Christian. 2003. "Carrying Confucianism into the Modern World: The Taiwan Case," in *Religion in Modern Taiwan: Tradition and Innovation in a Changing Society*, eds. Philip Clart and Charles B. Jones. Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press. 48-78.
- Li Silong, 2013. "The Practice of Buddhist Education in Modern China," *Chinese Studies in History* 46:3, 59-78.
- Li Yu-Chen, "In Pursuit of Buddhahood: Yinshun and Buddhist Studies in Postwar Taiwan," in *Development and Practice of Humanitarian Buddhism: Interdisciplinary Perspectives*, eds. Mutsu Hsu, Jinhua Chen, and Lori Meeks. Hualien: Tzu Chi University Press. 173-195.
- Pittman, Donald. 2001. *Toward a Modern Chinese Buddhism: Taixu's Reforms*. University of Hawaii Press: Honolulu.
- Schwarcz, Vera. 1986. *The Chinese Enlightenment: Intellectuals and the Legacy of the May Fourth Movement of 1919*. University of California Press; Berkeley.
- Ven. Sheng Yen. 1998. *Chan de shijie: Fagu quanji*. Part 4, Volume 8. Taipei: Dharma Drum Publishing Corp.
 - 1999. *Xueshu lunkao: Fagu quanji*. Part 3, Volume 1. Taipei: Dharma Drum Publishing Corp.
 - 1999. Education, Culture, and Literature: The Complete Works of Master Sheng-yen. Part 3, Volume 3. Taipei: Dharma Drum Publishing Corp.
 - 1999. *Fagushan de fangxiang: Fagu quanji*. Part 8, Volume 6. Taipei: Dharma Drum Publishing Corp.
 - 2005. *Fagu jiafeng: Fagu quanji*. Part 8, Volume 11. Taipei: Dharma Drum Publishing Corp.2005. Fagushan de fangxiang II: Fagu quanji. Part 8, Volume 13. Taipei: Dharma Drum Publishing Corp.
 - 2012. *A Journey of Learning and Insight*. Taipei: Dharma Drum Publishing Corp.
 - 2011. *Wo yuan wu qiong: meihao de wannian kaishi ji: Fagu quanji*. Taipei: Dharma Drum Publishing Corp.
 - 1999. Ping'an de renjian. Taipei: Fagu wenhua.
 - 1999. Ren xingdao. Taipei: Fagu wenhua.

· 118 · 聖嚴研究

- Von Stuckrad, Kocku. 2013. "Discursive Study of Religion: Approaches, Definitions, Implications," *Method and Theory in the Study of Religion* 25: 5-25.
- Welch, Holmes.1972. *Buddhism Under Mao*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press.
- Yu, Jimmy. 2010. "Master Sheng Yen and the Modern Construction of Chan," in *Flowering Fields, Fruitful Harvest: The 30th Anniversary of Chung-Hwa Institute of Buddhist Studies*. CD-ROM. 157-176.
- Zürcher, Erik. 1989. "Buddhism and Education in T'ang Times," in *Neo-Confucian Education: The Formative Stage*, eds. Wm. Theodore de Bary and John W. Chaffee. Taipei: SMC Publishing. 19-56.

啟迪的字 ──聖嚴教育思想與修辭分析

谷永誠

弘光科技大學應用英文系助理教授

▮摘要

「三大教育」是聖嚴法師弘揚「建設人間淨土」理念中很重要的部分。然而,這三種教育卻各有不同的側重點和不同的受眾。因為信眾是三大教育中十分重要的因素,因此我們可以假設三種教育之間有修辭的差異,或至少能區別在這三種類型中教育的意義。由於聖嚴法師主要的信眾(即使不是全部)在臺灣,因此,他如何描述教育是否依據臺灣教育的特色,是另一個需要考慮的因素。最後,聖嚴法師「教育」的運用,必須重新強調太虛和人間佛教推廣教育的觀念,及臺灣二十世紀後半的教育改革。

本文探討聖嚴法師的教育思想,特別是他如何促進僧 伽教育的改革,以及讓更多現代臺灣佛教徒理解佛教、與他 「建設人間淨土」的願景。

以諾曼·費爾克拉夫提出的"interdiscursivity"概念,能 幫助我們釐清教育如何作為一種隱喻,以及關注更寬廣的聖 嚴思想。使用這種觀點有兩個優點:首先,我們將能夠更清 楚地看到,聖嚴教導在各個方面如何交互作用而形成一個整 體性的修行方法。其次,"interdiscursive"的觀點可以說明教 育本身的各種論述和問題,無論它們是單獨的元素或是獨立 的論述,都將能提供一個基礎,從而探討中國宗教領域裡教 育的意義,及理解教育的目標。

關鍵詞: 聖嚴法師、教育、修辭學、法鼓山、淨土、人間佛教

論四念處與聖嚴法師的默照禪

涂艷秋

國立政治大學中文系教授

摘要

在《阿含經》中四念處被視為基礎的修行法門,在「身念處」的部分強調對當下身體的狀況、呼吸的狀況及組成狀況的認識,並因此延伸到對身體死亡後分解變化的認知。在「受念處」方面則強調六根與六塵相遇時,苦、樂、不苦不樂等覺知的觀察。「心念處」則重在觀察當下心的狀況,是處於有欲還是無欲、瞋恚還是愚癡?「法念處」則是觀察根塵相遇之後,心所生起的「法」的變化情形。大乘中的四念處,則開出一個「異法門」,認為在聲聞法之上必須跳脫到「不淨、無常、苦、空」的層面,方能真正地認識到身、受、心、法的實相。

聖嚴法師對四念處的看法,首先是將它視為漸法中三無漏學的基礎。其次,則是將它做為默照禪的基礎。最後,我們可以看到在默照禪卻無處不運用著這古老的智慧。雖然如此,但卻必須說默照禪的修行原則延續著五停心、四念處而來,但實際的操作則完全不同於五停心與四念處。由於默照禪在方法上的改良,使它達到的目標已不是做為修行基礎的四念處、五停心所能望其項背的了。

· 122 · 聖嚴研究

由此可知,這古老的修行法正以一種不同於以往的姿態,在當代禪法中延續著。換個角度來看,聖嚴法師的默照禪,雖是為了因應當代社會的發展,而開展出特有的教學模式,但其中卻延續著古老的智慧傳統。

關鍵詞:四念處、默照禪、聖嚴法師、禪

論四念處與聖嚴法師的默照禪 · 123 ·

一、前言

四念處是個古老的修行法,早從世尊的時代就已經開始運用了,一般將它視為三十七道品中的第一個步驟,基礎意味十分濃厚,隨著修行的深入,它演變為五根、五力、七覺支和八正道中的念根、念力、念覺支和正念等,可見這個法門不論在哪個層面都不可少。大乘佛法也沒有省略此步驟,反而是把它向深處、向高處延伸了。那麼,到了當代它還適用嗎?由於聖嚴法師可為當代臺灣最具代表性的禪師之一,所以吾人想以他為代表來檢視一下四念處究竟還能不能存活於二十一世紀的大乘禪法中,如果可以,它以何種形式存在?如果不行,那麼它為何被淘汰?

二、《阿含經》中的四念處

一般而言,我們對四念處的認知是將它視為三十七道品的第一道修行,通過這個修行之後,依次地進入四意斷、四神足、五根、五力、七覺支、八正道等階段。也就是說,它是佛教的基礎修行法,也是入道之津。

(一)四念處的重要性

這個古老的修行法,早在佛陀的時代就被廣泛運用了, 《阿含經》中處處可見它們的身影。在《阿含經》中四念處 也被視為基礎修行法,所謂:

爾時,世尊即詣講堂,就座而坐,告諸比丘:「汝等

當知我以此法自身作證,成最正覺,謂:『四念處、四意 斷、四神足、四禪、五根、五力、七覺意、賢聖八道。』 汝等宜當於此法中和同敬順,勿生諍訟,同一師受,同一 水乳,於我法中宜勤受學,共相熾然,共相娛樂。」

在佛陀教導學生走上「成最正覺」的道路時,四念處被當作 首要修行的工夫。既是入道之津,當然不能等閒視之。佛陀 對四念處這個基礎工夫的看重,遠超過我們的想像。他不但 認為它們是「四意斷、四神足、四禪、五根、五力、七覺 意、賢聖八道」的基礎,更以為它們是證得無上正等正覺的 必經之道,不論是過去諸如來、未來諸如來或是現在如來 都必須具備這個修行工夫,才能通往更深刻更細膩的修行, 所謂:

我聞如是:一時,佛遊拘樓瘦,在劍磨瑟曇拘樓都邑。 爾時,世尊告諸比丘:有一道淨眾生,度憂畏,滅苦惱, 斷啼哭,得正法,謂四念處。若有過去諸如來·無所著· 等正覺,悉斷五蓋、心穢、慧羸,立心正住於四念處,修 七覺支,得覺無上正盡之覺。若有未來諸如來·無所著· 等正覺,悉斷五蓋、心穢、慧羸,立心正住於四念處,修 七覺支,得覺無上正盡之覺。我今現在如來·無所著·等 正覺,我亦斷五蓋、心穢、慧羸,立心正住於四念處,修

七覺支,得覺無上正盡之覺。②

不論是過去、未來以及現在的如來都因為修行四念處,而能 斷五蓋、除心穢、無慧羸,也因為四念處的關係而能繼續修 行五根、五力、七覺支、八正道等,進而證獲「無上正盡之 覺」。由此可知在修行的道路上,四念處被視為「斷五蓋、 心穢、慧羸」的基礎方法,這個方法的習得與精進,關乎到 修行者能否繼續往下修行。正因為這個關鍵性的地位使得佛 陀特別地重視它,甚至認為它是「淨眾生,度憂畏,滅苦 惱,斷啼哭,得正法」的不二法門。

(二)四念處的基礎

嚴格說起來四念處並不是進入佛門的基礎,而是「得覺 無上正盡之覺」的初階,在《長阿含·遊行經》當中,佛陀 清楚地指出四念處是「成最正覺」的修行法,在《中阿含》 的〈因品念處經〉中也說明它是「得覺無上正盡之覺」的修 行法門,在《長阿含》的〈三聚經〉中則直接地指出它是 「向涅槃」的四法,所謂:

又有四法趣向惡趣,四法向善趣,四法向涅槃。云何四法向惡趣?謂愛語、恚語、怖語、癡語。云何四法向善趣?謂不愛語、不恚語、不怖語、不癡語。云何四法向涅

[●] 後秦·佛陀耶舍、竺佛念譯,《長阿含經》第3卷,〈遊行經〉第14經,《大正新脩大藏經》第1冊,頁16中-下。

[●] 東晉·僧伽提婆譯,《中阿含經》第24卷,〈因品念處經〉第98經, 《大正新脩大藏經》第1冊,頁582中。

槃?謂四念處:身念處、受念處、意念處、法念處。3

《長阿含》的〈三聚經〉中指出了人間三種不同的道路,一種是「趣向惡趣」的,另一種是「向善趣」的,而四念處則既非向善,也非向惡,乃是趨向涅槃解脫之道的,這是不同於世間的修善或作惡的。

四念處在「 向涅槃」之道上雖是基礎法門,但是如何引導人願意踏上「 向涅槃」之道則是它的基礎,《 阿含經》在這方面說明的相當清楚,如《中阿含·本際經》云:

明、解脫亦有習,非無習。何謂明、解脫習?答曰: 七覺支為習。七覺支亦有習,非無習。何謂七覺支習?答 曰:四念處為習。四念處亦有習,非無習。何謂四念處 習?答曰:三妙行為習。三妙行亦有習,非無習。何謂三 妙行習?答曰:護諸根為習。護諸根亦有習,非無習。何 謂護諸根習?答曰:正念、正智為習。正念、正智亦有 習,非無習。何謂正念、正智為習。正思惟為習。后 思惟亦有習,非無習。何謂正思惟智?答曰:信為習。信 亦有習,非無習。何謂信習?答曰:聞善法為習。信 亦有習,非無習。何謂聞善法習?答曰:親近善知識為 習。親近善知識亦有習,非無習。何謂親近善知識習?答 曰:善人為習。◆ 四念處是七覺支等深入修行的基礎,但卻以嚴淨身、口、意 三妙行為其根本;而三妙行的達成則須賴守護諸根為基礎; 能知道守護諸根的重要,進而真正地去守護它,則必須先具 備「正念正智」;「正念正智」的獲得則必須以正思維為基 礎,而這份正確思維的來源則是正確的信仰,因此正確的信 仰在作者看來幾乎是一切善行的基礎。

信仰固然重要,但是若無法聽聞佛法,仍沒有辦法接觸 到這份信仰,所以「聞善法」是信仰的基礎;「善法」必須 有傳揚者,否則一般人無法得知,因此「善知識」便成為佛 法能否傳布的基礎。但是當有人去宣揚佛法時,並不是所有 接觸佛法的人都會接納它,例如「一闡提」便會想盡辦法來 排斥它,因此必須自己是個願意接納佛法的「善人」,方能 敞開胸懷來接納這個善法,因此「善人」才是四念處修行的 真正基礎。也就是說一顆願意接納佛法的心,才是一切修行 基礎。

(三)四念處的修行法

從《長阿含》的〈三聚經〉中我們可以清楚地看到四 念處的內容為「謂四念處:身念處、受念處、意念處、法念 處」四者。然而何謂「身念處、受念處、意念處、法念處」 呢?它們的具體內容為何?又如何地修行呢?

❸ 後秦·佛陀耶舍、竺佛念譯,《長阿含經》第10卷,〈三聚經〉第12經,《大正新脩大藏經》第1冊,頁59下。

[●] 東晉·僧伽提婆譯,《中阿含經》第10卷,〈習相應品本際經〉第51經,《大正新脩大藏經》第1冊,頁487中-下。

1. 身念處

做為趨向涅槃基礎修行法的四念處,可說是三十七道 品中最為淺顯、最為基礎的部分。這四者當中又以「身念 處」最為根本,原因是它較諸其他念處更為容易掌握,所以 佛陀以此做為此一法門的第一道津樑。根據《中阿含經·念 處經》來看,身念處對身體的觀察分成六個層面: (1) 觀 察身體當下的動作; (2) 觀察呼吸的狀況; (3) 觀察構成 身體的因素; (4) 觀察身體不淨; (5) 觀察屍骸分解的情 形; (6) 觀察身體當下的反應。以下依次說明之。

(1) 觀察身體當下的動作

由於身體的姿態、狀況與知覺比起其他的感官覺知更明顯,更易於把握,所以佛陀以之做為三十七道品中最根本的修行。〈念處經〉中說明「身念處」的修行,首先必須將心念專注在觀察身體的一舉一動,包含行住坐臥、眠寤語默,與屈伸低昂等,經云:

云何觀身如身念處?比丘者,行則知行,住則知住,坐則知坐,臥則知臥,眠則知眠,寤則知寤,眠寤則知眠寤。如是比丘觀內身如身,觀外身如身,立念在身,有知有見,有明有達,是謂比丘觀身如身。復次,比丘觀身如身,比丘者,正知出入,善觀分別,屈伸低昂,儀容庠序,善著僧伽梨及諸衣缽,行住坐臥,眠寤語默皆正知之。如是比丘觀內身如身,觀外身如身,立念在身,有知有見,有明有達,是謂比丘觀身如身。③

身念處的觀察不像禪定中的一門深入,它是鎖定當下的身體 狀況,隨身體的動作與知覺進行觀察,觀察它此時此刻究竟 是屈還是伸,是低還是昂,是行還是臥,是保持靜默還是處 於言說當中,清楚地理解身體當下的狀況,即是身念處的第 一層修行。

(2) 觀察呼吸的狀況

身念處的第二個練習是觀察自己的呼吸,同樣是保持清楚地覺察,但覺察的對象卻轉變為呼吸,修行者必須明辨自己是在吸氣還是在呼氣,吸進來的氣是長還是短,呼出去的氣是強還是弱,〈念處經〉云:

復次,比丘觀身如身,比丘者,念入息即知念入息, 念出息即知念出息,入息長即知入息長,出息長即知出息 長,入息短即知入息短,出息短即知出息短;學一切身息 入,學一切身息出,學止身行息入,學止口行息出。如是 比丘觀內身如身,觀外身如身,立念在身,有知有見,有 明有達,是謂比丘觀身如身。⑥

觀察呼吸的狀況其實也是訓練收心攝念的一種方法,學習者 仍然不是刻意地鎖住某一段的呼吸,而是隨身體的自然呼 吸,觀察當時呼吸的狀況。修行者在知息進出、長短的同 時,當然也觀察到呼吸有逝去、當下與未來的分別,身念處

⁶ 同註2。

⁶ 同註2,頁582下。

的修行是不追悔過去,不臆想未來,只觀察此時此刻呼吸的 狀況,藉著「活在當下」的訓練來明白無常的意義。

(3) 觀察構成身體的因素

〈念處經〉的作者對身體的觀察,除了明白身體的動作、呼吸的長短之外,也進行身體內部結構的分析。在他看來,身體並非外在所見的是完整的個體,而是由所多不同部分所組成的,粗略而言分為六個層面,所謂:

復次,比丘觀身如身,比丘者,觀身諸界,我此身中 有地界、水界、火界、風界、空界、識界。猶如屠兒殺 牛,剝皮布地於上,分作六段。如是比丘觀身諸界,我此 身中,地界、水界、火界、風界、空界、識界。如是比丘 觀內身如身,觀外身如身,立念在身,有知有見,有明有 達,是謂比丘觀身如身。Э

修行者在觀察自身時,有時將身體分成六界來觀察,其中身體中的骨骼、肌肉、牙齒、內臟是屬於地界;而血液、眼淚、唾液、汗、尿則屬水界;其中溫暖知性與消化之熱均屬於火界;出息入息、與腹內之風都屬風界;加上胸腔、腹腔等虛空界與識界,當我們明白自己不過是六界的組合,即可知道此身之中「無我」。

(4) 觀察身體不淨

身念處的另一觀法是向內觀察,藉由明察身體的結構,

① 同註**②**,頁 583 中。

進而產生不淨的觀感,〈念處經〉云:

復次,比丘觀身如身,比丘者,此身隨住,隨其好惡, 從頭至足,觀見種種不淨充滿,我此身中有髮、髦、瓜、 齒、麤細薄膚、皮、肉、筋、骨、心、腎、肝、肺、大 腸、小腸、脾、胃、摶糞、腦及腦根、淚、汗、涕、唾、 膿、血、肪、髓、涎、膽、小便。猶如器盛若干種子。如是此,悉見分明,謂稻、粟種、蔓菁、芥子。如是此, 此身隨住,隨其好惡,從頭至足,觀見種種不淨充滿,骨 此身中有髮、髦、爪、齒、麤細薄膚、皮、肉、筋、骨 此身中有髮、髦、爪、齒、麤細薄膚、皮、肉、筋、骨 心、腎、肝、肺、大腸、小腸、脾、胃、摶糞、腦及腦 根、淚、汗、涕、唾、膿、血、肪、髓、涎、膽、小便。 如是比丘觀內身如身,觀外身如身,立念在身,有知有 見,有明有達,是謂比丘觀身如身。❸

〈念處經〉將身體支解成為「髮、髦、爪、齒、麤細薄膚、皮、肉、筋、骨、心、腎、肝、肺、大腸、小腸、脾、胃、 搏糞、腦及腦根、淚、汗、涕、唾、膿、血、肪、髓、涎、 膽、小便」的目的,不在產生「無我」的結論,而在於藉由 我們「從頭至足,觀見種種不淨充滿」的說明,使人不會再 愛著其身。

然而,將身體從頭到腳支解成髮、髦、爪、齒、皮、 肉、筋、骨等,充其量只是生理結構的分析,為何會產生不

❸ 同註2,頁583中。

淨的效果?這是由於我們涌常將自己或他人視為一個完整的 己執著的只是一些器官組織的集合,戀慕的只是「淚、汗、 人拆解成器官組織的集合,的確能產生不淨的效果。

(5) 觀察屍骸分解的情形

〈念處經〉中對身體的觀察不是停止在節節支解後,發 現其中臭穢充滿,不值得執著或戀慕而已,而是再向前一步 去觀察自己身體未來的狀況,這就是藉由屍骸分解的觀察階 段,〈念處經〉云:

復次,比丘觀身如身,比丘者,觀彼死屍,或一、二 日,至六、七日, 鳥鴟所啄, 豺狼所食, 火燒埋地, 悉腐 爛壞,見已自比:「今我此身亦復如是,俱有此法,終不 得離。」如是比丘觀內身如身,觀外身如身,立念在身, 有知有見,有明有達,是謂比丘觀身如身。◎

復次,比丘觀身如身,比丘者,如本見息道骸骨青色, 爛腐食半,骨璅在地,見已自比:「今我此身亦復如是, 俱有此法,終不得離。」如是比丘觀內身如身,觀外身如 身,立念在身,有知有見,有明有達,是謂比丘觀身如 身。復次,比丘觀身如身,比丘者,如本見息道,離皮肉

身念處的修行不只包含上沭對身體動作、組合、呼吸等 的理解,最特別的乃在於觀察修行者在這個修行中的反應為 何,例如:

血,唯筋相連,見已自比:『今我此身亦復如是,俱有此

法,終不得離。』如是比丘觀內身如身,觀外身如身,立

念在身,有知有見,有明有達,是謂比丘觀身如身。**⑩**

由屍骸分解的部分看來,四念處對身體的觀察極為徹底,它

不但觀察自身的現象,也藉由觀察骸骨的變化,深刻地體認

到所謂的「我」不過是「離皮肉血,唯筋相連」的組合,其

中「骨白如螺,青猶鴒色,赤若血塗,腐壞碎糕」,有何可

愛?當「骨節解散,散在諸方,足骨、脾骨、髀骨、髋骨、

脊骨、肩骨、頸骨、髑髏骨,各在異處」時❶,又何來所謂

復次,比丘觀身如身,比丘者,定生喜樂,漬身潤澤, 普遍充滿於此身中,定生喜樂無處不遍。猶如山泉,清淨 不濁,充滿流溢,四方水來,無緣得入,即彼泉底,水自 涌出,流溢於外,清山潤澤,普遍充滿無處不周。如是比 丘定生喜樂,漬身潤澤,普遍充滿於此身中,定生喜樂無 處不遍。如是比丘觀內身如身,觀外身如身,立念在身,

的「我」?

⁽⁶⁾ 觀察身體當下的反應

[●] 同註2, 頁 583 中 - 下。

[●] 同註❷,頁583下。

個體,以為真有其人,從而產生執著自我、戀慕他人的情 形,但若將看人的角度轉到生理結構上來,我們就會發現自 涕、唾、膿、血、肪、髓、涎、膽、小便」充滿的聚合體, 那麼還有什麼值得執著值得戀慕的呢?從這個方面來看,將

有知有見,有明有達,是謂比丘觀身如身。10

修行者明白自己在此修行中的反應,如果是因「定生喜樂」,則喜樂「猶如山泉,清淨不濁,充滿流溢,四方水來,無緣得入,即彼泉底,水自涌出,流溢於外,漬山潤澤,普遍充滿無處不周」的感覺。此時身體內三百六十個毛孔無一不感到舒暢;若是這個修行「無喜生樂」時,那麼身體的感受就如同「猶青蓮華,紅、赤、白蓮,水生水長,在於水底,彼根莖華葉悉漬潤澤,普遍充滿無處不周」 3 。這也是身念處觀察的內容。

2. 受念處

受念處的修行重在觀察內六處與外六處接觸後,身體上產生的苦、樂、不苦不樂等反應,這種反應特稱之為「受」,「受」生起之後繼而才會產生愛憎之情。因此修行者認為在處理變化多端的情緒反應之前,應當先就六根與六境接觸的那一剎那觀察其心理反應,從而知道愛憎癡慢等生起的途徑,〈念處經〉云:

云何觀覺如覺念處?比丘者,覺樂覺時,便知覺樂覺。 覺苦覺時,便知覺苦覺。覺不苦不樂覺時,便知覺不苦不 樂覺。覺樂身、苦身、不苦不樂身;樂心、苦心、不苦不 樂心;樂食、苦食、不苦不樂食;樂無食、苦無食、不 苦不樂無食;樂欲、苦欲、不苦不樂欲。樂無欲、苦無欲 覺、不苦不樂無欲覺時,便知覺不苦不樂無欲覺。如是比 丘觀內覺如覺,觀外覺如覺,立念在覺,有知有見,有明 有達,是謂比丘觀覺如覺。若比丘、比丘尼如是少少觀覺 如覺者,是謂觀覺如覺念處。❶

〈念處經〉稱「受念處」為「覺念處」。不論是強調「受」 或是「覺」,此一修行目的在於觀察六根與六塵相遇時身心 的反應,要能如實地察「覺」此時是苦、是樂、還是不苦不 樂,若是強調如實覺知即稱之為「覺念處」,若是強調覺知 後心理的感受則稱之為「受念處」。其主旨都在藉訓練修行 者專注於根塵相遇的「當下」。

3. 心念處

心念處的修行是讓修行者向內觀察「心」的狀態,但是 強調的還是「當下」心的狀況,既不溯及深層的心理狀態, 也不探究過去的相關記憶,〈念處經〉云:

云何觀心如心念處?比丘者,有欲心知有欲心如真,無欲心知無欲心如真,有恚,無恚,有癡,無癡,有穢汙,無穢汙。有合,有散,有下,有高,有小,有大,修,不修,定,不定,有不解脫心知不解脫心如真,有解脫心知解脫心如真。如是比丘觀內心如心,觀外心如心,立念在心,有知有見,有明有達,是謂比丘觀心如心。若有比

❷ 同註❷,頁 582下-583上。

圆 同註2,頁583上。

[●] 同註2,頁583下-584上。

丘、比丘尼如是少少觀心如心者,是謂觀心如心念處。 [5]

「心念處」的修行,是繼「受念處」之後的觀察,當修行者 明白根塵相遇的當下,自己是覺苦還是覺樂,其後再觀察因 此苦受或樂受之後,內心所產生的貪愛、瞋恚、或是癡慢等 心理狀況。換句話說,修行者在明白自己的覺受之後,必須 進一步地察覺自己在這些覺受之下所產生的欲念、憤怒、貪 愛等情結。如實地明白此時此刻心所處的狀態,這就是「心 念處」修行的內容。

4. 法念處

「法念處」是在「心念處」之後的進一步的觀察。當修 行者察覺自己在根塵相遇時苦樂的感受,與因此苦樂之受所 產生的欲念、憤怒、貪愛等情結後,進一步地去觀察這些欲 念、憤怒、貪愛等「法」的變化,即是「法念處」的修行, 所謂:

云何觀法如法念處?眼緣色生內結,比丘者,內實有結,知內有結如真;內實無結,知內無結如真。若未生內結,而生者知如真;若已生內結,滅不復生者知如真。如是耳、鼻、舌、身,意緣法生內結,比丘者,內實有結,知內有結如真;內實無結,知內無結如真。若未生內結,而生者知如真;若已生內結,滅不復生者知如真。如是比丘觀內法如法,觀外法如法,立念在法,有知有見,有明

有達,是謂比丘觀法如法,謂內六處。16

又:

復次,比丘觀法如法。比丘者,內實有欲,知有欲如真;內實無欲,知無欲如真,若未生欲,而生者知如真;若已生欲,滅不復生者知如真。如是瞋恚、睡眠、調悔。內實有疑,知有疑如真;內實無疑,知無疑如真。若未生疑,而生者知如真;若已生疑,滅不復生者知如真。如是比丘觀內法如法,觀外法如法,立念在法,有知有見,有明有達,是謂比丘觀法如法,謂五蓋也。即

「心念處」在觀察根塵相遇後「心」自己的轉變,不論轉變 為貪瞋癡妄的哪一種,心在那個情境中所呈現的狀態。而 「法念處」的修行,則是側重在如實地了解六根與六塵相遇 後,生起了什麼樣的心所法,接著觀察這個「法」的生滅與 變化過程,只有如實地掌握,而後能了解自我所處的狀況, 接著方可接續四正斷的修行。

這個訓練不只是適用於觀察煩惱生成的過程,也同樣適用於觀察修行的過程,〈念處經〉云:

復次,比丘觀法如法。比丘者,內實有念覺支知有念覺

⑤ 同註❷,頁584 上。

⑥ 同註❷, 頁 584 上。

⑩ 同註❷,頁584 上-中。

支如真,內實無念覺支知無念覺支如真,若未生念覺支而 生者知如真,若已生念覺支便住不忘而不衰退,轉修增廣 者知如真,如是法、精進、喜、息、定。比丘者,內實有 捨覺支知有捨覺支如真,內實無捨覺支知無捨覺支如真, 若未生捨覺支而生者知如真,若已生捨覺支便住不忘而不 衰退,轉修增廣者知如真。如是比丘觀內法如法,觀外法 如法,立念在法,有知有見,有明有達,是謂比丘觀法如 法,謂七覺支。若有比丘、比丘尼如是少少觀法如法者, 是謂觀法如法念處。

「法念處」的修行對於煩惱的生起,只做到如實知其生、如實知其滅而已,所謂「立念在法,有知有見,有明有達」。但對於修行的過程,則不但要知道自己有沒有如法修行,且要有更進一步的加強動作,所謂「若已生念覺支,便住不忘而不衰退,轉修增廣者知如真,如是法、精進、喜、息、定」。換言之,「法念處」在修行過程的觀察中,必須從「念處」進一步轉變為念覺支,當念覺支產生後「便住不忘而不衰退」,並且「轉修增廣」。由此可知四念處雖為基礎修行,但無處不在為下一個步驟進行準備。

這個基礎的修行法,到了大乘時代並沒有因為菩薩道的提出而被推翻。相反的,它經過了轉型,成為大乘修行中不可或缺的一環。以下我們以《大智度論》為例來說明大乘佛教中的「四念處」。

三、《大智度論》中的四念處

小乘的四念處著重在根塵相遇時,對苦樂感受的觀察;並在此觀察上繼續觀察「心」在此「受」之下,所產生的貪瞋癡妄等心理過程,以及此過程的生滅變化的軌跡。但大乘的四念處在提出「觀身不淨、觀受是苦、觀心無常、觀法無我」時,仍是從根塵相遇的那一剎那,一路的觀察下來嗎?還是另闢蹊徑?由於《摩訶般若經》僅有「四念處」合稱的地方,而沒有分別論述的部分,所以只能從它的註釋本——《大智度論》來觀察。

(一)四念處修行的目的

《大智度論》的作者認為四念處的提出,是為了對治眾 生在「多念」與「亂心」之下,「顛倒」身、受、心、法的 緣故,所謂:

有眾生多念,亂心顛倒故,著此身、受、心、法中作 邪行,為是人故說四念處。如是等諸道法,各各為眾生 說。⑩

那麼,眾生究竟是如何顛倒四法呢?《大智度論》又當如何 利用四念處來修正這些顛倒呢?〈三十七品義〉云:

❸ 同註2,頁584中。

[●] 後秦·鳩摩羅什譯,《大智度論》第19卷,《大正新脩大藏經》第25冊,頁198上。

凡夫人未入道時,是四法中,邪行起四顛倒:諸不淨法 中淨顛倒,苦中樂顛倒,無常中常顛倒,無我中我顛倒。 破是四顛倒故,說是四念處;破淨倒故說身念處;破樂倒 故說受念處;破常倒故說心念處;破我倒故說法念處。

從〈三十七品義〉當中,可以知道犯四顛倒的是「凡夫人未 入道時」。所起的「顛倒」是將不淨視為淨,將苦視為樂, 將無常視為常,將無我視為有我。《大智度論》的作者認為 這種顛倒並非事物本身的問題,而是來自於吾人錯誤的認 識,這些錯誤的觀點猶如一副副有色的眼鏡,使得事物蒙上 不屬它的色調,扭曲成不是自己的形狀。由此衍生的執著與 苦痛,不但影響今生的生活,還會令人輪迴飄流於三界,因 此不能不正視這個問題。

由於問題不在外界事物,而在於人觀看事物的方法。所以解決問題的方法,也就不必放在修正外界事物上,而須反過來修正我們觀看事物的方法。《大智度論》的作者認為想要修正我們對身、受、心、法的顛倒,莫過於如實地觀照它們,因此提出「四念處」來對治「四顛倒」。期望藉著如實觀照,使凡夫顛倒下呈現常樂我淨的身、受、心、法,翻轉回無常、無我、苦及不淨。

(二)四念處修行的方法

《大智度論》論及四念處的修行法時,將它區分為「餘

經」(其他經典)及「本經」(般若經)兩大系統,分別稱 為「聲聞法門」及「異法門」,所謂:

復次,餘經中說四念處,隨聲聞法門。於是比丘觀內 身三十六物,除欲貪病;如是觀外身,觀內外身。今於四 念處,欲以異門說般若波羅蜜。如所說:菩薩觀內身,於 身不生覺觀,不得身,以無所得故。如是觀外身,觀內外 身,於身不生覺觀,不得身,以無所得故。於身念處中觀 身而不生身覺觀,是事甚難。三念處亦如是。四正勤、四 如意足、四禪、四諦等種種四法門,亦如是。2

從「今於四念處,欲以異門說般若波羅蜜」一語看來望, 《大智度論》似乎是另闢一條異於「聲聞法門」的蹊徑來解釋「四念處」。但從全經看來,它並沒有揚棄聲聞法門,改 而主張所謂的「異法門」;而是在不棄聲聞法門之下,利用 般若波羅蜜來說明各個「念處」的深層結構,從而形成異法 門。例如〈三十七品義〉中說明「身念處」時先立足於「聲 聞法門」,分別從五個方面來進行分析,所謂:

行者依淨戒住,一心行精進,觀身五種不淨相。何等

② 同註**①**,頁198下。

[●] 後秦·鳩摩羅什譯,《大智度論》第1卷,《大正新脩大藏經》第25 冊,頁62中-下。

② 按《大正新脩大藏經》校勘,《宋》、《元》、《明》本「今於四念處,欲以異門說般若波羅蜜」一句,皆作「欲以異法門說四念處故」。 (同上)

五?一者、生處不淨,二者、種子不淨,三者、自性不 淨,四者、自相不淨,五者、究竟不淨。③

有關「身念處」的修行,《大智度論》首先從「不淨觀」 開始,其次進入「無常觀」以及「苦觀」,〈三十七品 義〉云:

行者思惟:是身雖復不淨,若少有常者猶差,而復無常。雖復不淨、無常,有少樂者猶差,而復大苦。是身是眾苦生處,如水從地生,風從空出,火因木有,是身如是,內外諸苦皆從身出。內苦名老、病、死等,外苦名刀杖、寒熱、飢渴等,有此身故有是苦。發

完成了「不淨觀」、「無常觀」和「苦觀」之後,作者再進入「無我觀」的層面來觀照「身念處」,所謂:

如是等種種因緣,知身苦相、苦因。行者知身但是不 淨、無常、苦物,不得已而養育之;譬如父母生子,子復 弊暴,以從已生故,要當養育成就。身實無我,何以故? 不自在故。譬如病風之人,不能俯仰行來;病咽塞者,不 能語言。以是故,知身不自在。如人有物,隨意取用;身 不得爾,不自在故,審知無我。行者思惟是身,如是不 淨、無常、苦、空、無我,有如是等無量過惡。如是等種 種觀身,是名身念處。❷

《大智度論》「身念處」的修行,不只是「不淨觀」而已,還包含「無常觀」、「苦觀」和「無我觀」。其他的三個念處也一樣包含著這四個層面。這種修行的方法顯然有別於《阿含經》的「聲聞法門」。

若以「身念處」觀察之,則可發現《大智度論》中有「苦觀」,而《阿含經》中沒有。《大智度論》將《阿含經》中的「知身不淨」和「屍骸分解」同置於「不淨觀」之下。但同樣是觀「無常」時,《阿含經》藉觀「知當下身體的狀況」、「知息之狀況」、「知覺中的身體反應」的方法,就不同於《大智度論》中從身苦證身無常的方法。

然而,《大智度論》與《阿含經》最大的不同,還不在於「聲聞法門」,而是在「異法門」的部分。所謂的「異法門」強調要以般若智慧來觀照,在般若智慧的指導之下修行四念處,〈四念處品〉云:

行者先以不淨、無常、苦、空、無我等智慧觀內身, 不得是身好相:若淨相,若常相,若樂,若我,若實。內 既不得,復觀外身,求淨、常、我、樂、實亦不可得。 若不得便生疑:「我觀內時,於外或錯;觀外時,於內或 錯。」今內外一時俱觀,亦不可得。是時心得正定,知是

³ 同註(D), 頁 198下。

❷ 同註♥,頁199中。

⁵ 同註 ●, 頁 198 中 - 下。

身不淨、無常、苦、空、無我,如病、如癰、如瘡,九孔 流穢,是為行廁;不久破壞、離散、盡滅、死相;常有飢 渴、寒熱,鞭杖、繋閉,罵詈、毀呰,老病等,諸苦常 圍遠,不得自在。內空無主,亦無知者、見者,作者、受 者,但空諸法因緣和合而有,自生自滅,無所繋屬,猶如 草木,是故內外俱觀。餘內、外義,如十八空中說。◆

在般若的指導下,是以「不淨、無常、苦、空、無我等智慧」來觀照內身、外身或內外身,在此一觀照下,修行者不再依據「聲聞法門」進行觀照,而是直入實相,觀照身、受、心、法,從而發現不論是從內、從外或內、外一時俱觀時,身、受、心、法均不可得,修行者亦據此「知是身不淨、無常、苦、空、無我」,且「諸苦常圍遠,不得自在」,身中「內空無主」,實「無我」可言。所有的知者、見者、作者、受者都只是「空」,只是「諸法因緣和合而有,自生自滅,無所繫屬,猶如草木」,所以是「不可得」,無所有的。

〈四念處品〉在「觀內身不淨」時曾提出「不生身 覺」的方法,此法最足以代表「異法門」觀身念處的精神, 所謂:

「不生身覺者」,不取身一異相而生戲論。眾生於是身

中起種種覺:有生淨覺,有生不淨覺;有生瞋覺,念他過罪;有人觀此身:「身為何法?諸身分邊為一、為異?」不生如是種種覺,所以者何?無所利益,妨涅槃道故。復次,餘凡夫、聲聞人取身相能觀身;菩薩不取身相而能觀身。②

這種「不生身覺」的方法,除了不分別身為一、為異之外,也在避免「身中起種種覺」,這種種覺——包含淨覺、不淨覺、瞋覺、恚覺等等,在修行者看來都是「無所利益,妨涅槃道故」的,所以主張根塵相遇之時,菩薩必須「不生如是種種覺」。因為這些妨礙我們進入「涅槃道」的種種覺知,也是致使吾人落入輾轉輪迴的主因。

〈四念處品〉不只說明「身念處」的修行在於使人不生種種覺知,同時說明「菩薩不取身相而能觀身」的特色。凡夫和聲聞都會「觀身」,但他們都是「取身相」而觀身。凡夫人因不明實相,所以在根塵相會的時候,隨欲念、瞋恚與愚癡而沉淪,因此所取的「身相」即是執取迷妄之下的「身相」;而所觀的身也是充滿貪瞋癡妄的形軀之身。聲聞雖然也是取身相而觀身,但他的取不同於凡夫,凡夫執取的是根塵相遇下因緣所成的事物,由於視之為實,所以執取它;但聲聞所執取卻不是這個看似實有的「身」,而是在層層分破之後那個三世實有的法體。《大智度論》的作者如何避免落入產生種種覺的情況?如何「不取身相而能觀身」?《大智

[●] 後秦・鳩摩羅什譯,《大智度論》第48卷,《大正新脩大藏經》第25冊,頁403下-404上。

⁹ 同註**3**, 頁 404 上。

度論》云:

行者作是念:「是身無常,不淨可惡;如此眾生,何故 貪著此身,起種種罪因緣?」如是思惟已,知是身中有五 情,外有五欲,和合故生世間顛倒樂!人心求樂,初無住 時。當觀此樂,為實為虛?身為堅固,猶尚散滅,何況此 樂!此樂亦無住處,未來未有,過去已滅,現在不住,念 念皆滅;以遮苦故名樂,無有實樂!譬如飲食,除飢渴苦 故,暫以為樂,過度則復生苦,如先破樂中說。則知世間 樂,皆從苦因緣生,亦能生苦果,誑人須臾,後苦無量。 譬如美食雜毒,食雖香美,毒則害人,世間樂亦如是。❷

「聲聞法門」從六根與六塵相遇的那一剎那觀察,觀察心在哪一種情況下產生苦的感覺,哪一種情形下產生樂、或不苦不樂的感覺,從而向下觀察自己會在哪一種情況,產生哪一種執著。但「異法門」則直接從苦和樂都是根塵和合所產生的顛倒入手,當他說「當觀此樂,為實為虛」時,他的觀察法是從覺受的發生處觀察起:首先,修行者發現所有的覺受都來自於「身」,而「身」本身即是不堅的,即如電、如露、如夢幻泡影般的不真實,那麼寄託其上所產生的苦、樂、不苦不樂又怎能是長存的?其次,修行者再從另一個角度觀察「此樂亦無住處」,不管從未來、過去或是現在來觀察,「樂」都無法實存。未來的「樂」因為尚未生起,當

然不存在;過去的「樂」早已煙消雲散,所以也不存在;即 使是現在的「樂」,也只是因緣聚合下的產物,它並沒有實 體可言,在因緣剎那變換之下立刻消失無蹤。由於「念念皆 滅」,所以並無實存的樂受或苦受,亦無不苦不樂受,因此 作者說明「無有實樂」。最後,作者再說明沒有真實的樂; 至於為何要提出「樂」來?作者認為世間樂,只是世人對 無世間苦時所做的假名施設而已,何來真實的樂呢?所以 「樂」這個假名的存在,不過是為了「遮苦」之用。所謂的 「遮苦」是指當苦暫時沒有時則稱之為「樂」,其實苦不會 因為這短暫的「樂」而消失的,除非你修行,且修行到超越 三界之外,這個三界之苦才可能消滅。所以身不堅,而覺受 也不真啊!

對於「心念處」與「法念處」的修行,也是站在般若智 慧的指導下進行,所謂:

好然煩惱等毒故,奪智慧命,心則狂惑,捨利取衰,誰 受此樂?唯有心識。諦觀此心念念生滅,相續有故,可得 取相,譬如水波、燈焰。受苦心非樂心,受樂心非苦心, 受不苦不樂心非苦樂心,時相各異,以是故心無常。無常 故不自在,不自在故無我。想、思、憶念等亦如是。❷

「法念處」中所謂的「法」,指的是根塵相遇時因心的反應 所產生的心相。在般若智慧指導下的「異法門」,對於此

³ 同註30,頁405 上。

⁹ 同註**3**, 頁 405 上 - 中。

「法」的看法是「唯有心識。諦觀此心,念念生滅,相續有故,可得取相,譬如水波、燈焰」。也就是說,此「法」是念念相續的心識之「相」,這「相」就如同「水波、燈焰」一樣,每一剎那流過的都是不同的水,燃燒的都是不同的燈焰。從般若看這「法」,不在觀察此「法」剎那不同,而在從新新不同、交臂非故當中明白法「無相」。

不僅是心識無相,心的覺受也同樣是無的,「異法門」 不再觀察「心」在根塵相遇時,因執著心相而產生的苦、 樂、不苦不樂等當下的覺受,而是觀察「受苦心非樂心,受 樂心非苦心,受不苦不樂心非苦樂心」等改變的現象,從而 得知「時相各異,以是故心無常」。如果「聲聞法門」對心 相的觀察是當下的、是屬別相的。那麼「異法門」的觀察則 重在一般的、屬總相的層面。

般若在「觀心無常」的方面,從作用層上來說心的變異,並非認為事物具有一個不變的本質層;而是認為事物能夠改變,是因為它從本質到作用都是可改變的,也就是事物並不存在著一個三世恆存的法體。因為若不是具有一個可以改變的本質,那麼任何一個外在的力量都無法改變此物。如此一來,凡夫永遠是凡夫,生存於三界之中的永遠只能流轉於三界之內,永無法解脫之日。但這卻無法解釋悉達多可以成佛的事實。所以《大智度論》的作者認為當事物改變時,不只肯定因緣條件對此發生的作用力,其實也說明事物本身具有能被改變的本質——空。也就是說任何改變都是徹首徹尾地改變,絕不會只是外表改變,本質卻不變。由此可知,當我們說一切法無常時,也說明了一切法中沒有一個不變的

「我」,諸法是「無我」的。

《大智度論》的作者不只是以「異法門」來處理身、 受、心、法各個念處的修行。事實上,他也以此法來指導我 們對「四念處」這個修行法的看法,作者在第四十二卷〈集 散品〉中引經云:

復次,世尊!菩薩摩訶薩欲行般若波羅蜜,四念處中不應住。何以故?四念處、四念處相空。世尊!四念處空,不名為四念處,離空亦無四念處;四念處即是空,空即是四念處。乃至十八不共法亦如是。世尊!以是因緣故,菩薩摩訶薩欲行般若波羅蜜,四念處乃至十八不共法中不應住。30

在此段經文中,作者清楚地指出在般若波羅蜜的指導下,「四念處中不應住」,其因乃是在於無一念處有其自性,合 起來的四念處自然也無自性可言,每一念處均是諸法和合, 合起的四念處當然也是諸法合成。既是因緣和合所成,又怎 能有固定「相」可執可著?無四念處,也無四念處相,當然 也就無法「住」於四念處中了。

四、聖嚴法師的默照禪

默照禪是聖嚴法師禪法教學中最重要的方法之一。據

[●] 後秦·鳩摩羅什譯,《大智度論》第42卷,《大正新脩大藏經》第25冊,頁366中。

法師自言,這個方法承繼自宋代的宏智正覺。宏智闡揚默照的作品,大抵圓融渾深,但法師的作品則步驟清晰,說理明白,讓曾經修學者與未曾修行者都能明白其中的精妙之處。 法師通常將默照禪分為三個階段到。以下分別說明之。

(一)默照禪的第一階段

默照禪的第一個階段是以「只管打坐」為中心。可分為「鬆法」和「緊法」兩種方式。所謂「鬆緊」,是指對打坐本身所付出的心力而言,緊迫地盯住打坐者為「緊法」,輕鬆的坐在那裡則是「鬆法」。然而不論採用鬆法或緊法,修行者都必須明白自己正在「打坐」。打坐的姿勢以蓮花坐或半跏趺坐為佳。

「只管打坐」時必須將心念完全集中在「身體上」, 通常利用觀察呼吸與身體的重量感達成這個修行。聖嚴法師 認為:

雨者之中又以呼吸的感受容易運用。就像數息的方法一樣,呼吸可以幫助你把念頭集中在身體上,讓你知道你正在打坐。不過這兩種方法之間有重要的差別,因為數息是努力把心念集中在呼吸上,並排除其他的一切;反觀「只管打坐」這個修默照禪的初步階段,呼吸的感受適用來培

養對整個身體的覺識,此時一個人的注意力應該停留在整個身體上,而不是只有呼吸上。

②

至於觀察身體重量的方法,則是觀察支撐身體的任何一部 分,例如坐在蒲團上的臀部、骨盆,乃至貼在地面的膝蓋與 腳掌均可。這些部位都可將身體的重量感帶入意識中,從而 培養出我們對正在打坐的這個身體的覺識。

然而,不論是對呼吸的觀察,或是對身體重量的觀察, 其目的都在讓人覺察到我的身體此時此刻正在打坐。這種時時的提醒主要是避免修習默照的初期,遇到雜念紛起的現象。當雜念紛飛時,修行者不應主動地去理會雜念,只需告訴自己現在的我正在打坐,將心識收攝回身體上,即能避免與雜念發生「剪不斷,理還亂」的糾葛。

當心識照臨身體時,修行者可以觀察打坐時,頭、手、腳、背等所呈現的痠、痛、麻、癢等感覺,並利用這種覺受,將這些部分收攏為整個身體中的一部分,直到身心合而為一,不再感覺到有頭、手、腳、背的區分,只將它們視為自己的身體,從而覺知到這是我的身體在打坐。

同時也學習任由它去痠、去痛、去麻、去癢,以這種擱置法讓疼痛痠麻不再困擾自己,時間久了,自然能明白疼痛不是永遠的,它沒有自性可言,當疼痛消失後,修行者的心會變得更敏銳、更寧靜、更專注。當身體不再是負累時,留

動 這種分法只是一般性區分,而不是絕對性的。有些人需要經過三個階段的訓練,但有些人可能在第一個階段就開悟了,不需第二與第三個階段。

[●] 釋聖嚴、丹・史蒂文生著,梁永安譯,《牛的印跡:禪修與開悟見性的 道路》,臺北:商周出版社,2011年1月12日二版,頁235。

下的將是清明而又開闊的心。

(二) 默照禪的第二階段

默照禪的第二個階段是身心與環境合而為一的修行。 這個階段可細分為兩個層次,第一個層次是建立在第一個階 段那寧靜、專注、清晰的心上所做的發展。使那個愈來愈細 膩,愈來愈清明的心,超越分別思想,超越身體的重量感與 限制感,進而與身旁的環境合而為一。然而要注意的是此時 所謂的「合而為一」,並無法泯除主、客對立的事實,修行 者仍然能清楚地知道何者是環境,何者是我。因此必須再深 入第二個層次,在這個層次中,法師如是提醒道:

你應該進一步將外在的事物收攝到你的覺識中,就像你 先前把身體感受收攝到身心整體中那樣。假以時日,你的 覺識就會把整個宇宙收納進來;而隨著對象與領域限制的 消解,你就會進入到修默照第二階段的第二層次。每

進入第二個階段的第二層次後,修行者所見的環境已無任何隔閡,也無任何限制,內境與外境會如如呈現,但卻無扞格之處,法師說:「因為到了此時,外境不過就是你的一部分」 ● 。因此,打坐的「身體」擴大到變成整個世界,心也開展到無疆無界的地步。

這個階段的第三個層次則是「空」的體驗,由於身心的擴展,導致修行者感覺到自我與對象都不復存在,這種主、客對立的消除的確很像「空」的展現。但法師認為這個「空」「仍受到一種隱微的自我意識和對象意識所限制」\$\fotagerightarrows\text{6}\text{5}\text{6}\text{7}\text{6}\text{7}\text{7}\text{9}\text{7}\text{7}\text{8}\text{8}\text{8}\text{9}\text{1}\text{8}\text{9}\text{1}\text{8}\text{8}\text{8}\text{1}\text{8}\text{8}\text{9}\text{1}\text{8}\text{8}\text{8}\text{1}\text{8}\text{9}\text{9}\text{8}\text{8}\text{8}\text{9}\text{8}\text{8}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{8}\text{8}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{8}\text{8}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{8}\text{8}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{8}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{8}\text{8}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{8}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{9}\text{8}\text{9}\text{8}\text{9

(三) 默照禪的第三個階段

默照禪的第三個階段是難以言宣的,因為它是超越了第二階段的內外統一,也就是超越世間禪定的統一心❸ ,進入到出世間禪,走進了「無心」的範疇。聖嚴法師云:

在這個階段,修行與體證之間沒有分別,而禪定與開悟智慧也是不相離的。到達這個階段以後,心就永遠不會為因緣所移動,並得以從自我的虛妄思想中解脫,而同時又能夠體認到別人的需要並予以充分的回應。每

由此可知第三個階段的默照禪,雖說是「無心」,但不是稿 木死灰般的無任何作用,無任何反應,相反的,修行者清楚 地察覺到每件事物的變化與發展,且能適時適當的處理, 但卻絲毫不受事物的影響。這種是任運自然下的「默」與

❸ 同註❷,頁237。

³ 同註3 , 頁 238。

⁵ 同註2, 頁 239。

⑤ 「上述三種體驗(第二階段的三個層次)都是世間禪定帶來統一心的產物,它們都屬於大我的層次,而不屬於那來自無我智慧的出世間禪定的層次。」(同註⑩,頁239)

同註②, 頁 239。

「照」。法師形容它像一面鏡子,所謂:

這種默照就像一面鏡子,形影自由自在地在面前出現, 他卻保持完全靜止,外在環境就像這興經過的形影一樣, 你的心就是這面鏡子,因為不動,所以是默;明鑒他面前 的一切事物,這就是照。

此時的「心」雖然是「默」,是「不動」的,但法師強調它不是對環境茫然無知,斷絕封閉的「停滯」,「相反的,在第三階段的默照中,心静止卻開放,清楚地反應萬事萬物。在這種清楚明澄中,心是靜止的」

。也就是說,第三階段中所謂的「默」是指完全斷絕了環境的干擾與影響,並非斷絕對環境的了知。正因為不受外境的影響,更能看清外界事物,做出更正確的反應。用禪宗的語言來說這是個任運自在的境界。

五、默照禪與四念處

想要釐清聖嚴法師的默照禪與四念處間的異同,除上 述的一一釐清大、小乘的四念處,以明白四念處的根本意義 及其轉變外。其次,便是說明聖嚴法師默照禪的內容。再 者,方才是比較二者的異同。而在比較異同前,必須先抽繹 出四念處的根本精神,以理解這古老的修行法的特色何在? 而後再看一看聖嚴法師如何看待四念處。他對這古老修行方 法的認識,勢必影響到他自己的禪法會不會採用它。最後, 再深入默照禪中,仔細地探究默照禪中究竟有沒有四念處的 身影。

(一)四念處的特色

不論是大乘或是小乘的修行法裡,四念處都占了一席之 地。這說明了四念處的修行有其不可取代的重要性。那麼, 這個重要的修行法門,其主要的特色在哪裡呢?這個特色有 沒有可能綿延數千年,成為古今修行中不可或缺的部分?

1. 注重「當下」

首先,我們觀察小乘的四念處修行法,可以發現不論是 在進行「身念處」時的「觀身體的動作」,或是「觀呼吸的 狀況」,乃至於「觀身體的反應」,他們的共同特色都是注 意於「當下」身體的屈伸俯仰、呼吸的出入短長與喜樂、清 淨、瞋恚等反應。目的在藉由覺知「當下」的自己,體證到 無常的事實。

同樣的,其他的三個念處所觀察的對象雖然不再是身體,而是以根塵相遇時的受、心、法,但仍強調「當下」這個條件。如「受念處」所觀的是根塵相遇那一剎那心裡的苦樂等感受。「心念處」時則是觀在苦樂感受下,心中隨之而生起的欲念、瞋恚與愚癡等法。至於「法念處」則是觀察心念處所生起的那些「法」的生、住、異、滅等變化。總而言之,修行者在乎的仍是「當下」的那一剎那。由此可知聲聞

[◎] 聖嚴法師著,單德興譯,《無法之法》,臺北,法鼓文化,2009年8月,頁39-40。

[ூ] 同上, 頁 40。

乘的四念處其特色之一即是著重「當下」。

其次,在大乘佛教的四念處修行中,首重的仍然是「當下」的身、受、心、法。雖然它的重心已不像聲聞法一樣放在根塵相遇之處,而是以般若智慧為主導。但所強調的仍是「當下」這個剎那。大乘行者在般若指導發現「當下」所有的執著都是「內五情」與「外五欲」結合下的結果。而內外結合之下所生的苦樂、貪瞋、癡妄都是顛倒。這些妄想會驅使我們為之鑽營奔走,乃至爭競謀奪而無所不用其極,使我們因之流轉不已。凡此種種受、心、法都是依於「身」而有,但「身」本身就是不實,就會毀壞,由之而生的受、心、法又怎能恆常?怎能實有?在《大智度論》的作者看來,此心只是念念生滅,相續而有,何來真實永存之「心」?心中的貪瞋癡妄更是如水波、燈焰剎那即逝,在此新新不停的變易中,哪來真實不變的法體?然而,不論般若指導下的大乘佛法與聲聞乘的距離有多大,他所觀察的對象仍是「當下」的身受心法。

2. 依靠「觀」而修行

四念處的修行依靠的是「觀」,不論是大乘或是小乘,只要想觀照身受心法時,都必須專心致意於所觀察的對象;若有一絲一毫的懈怠,即無法照見所觀的對象。例如修行聲聞法中的「身念處」,必須觀察身體當下的動作、呼吸的狀況以及身體當下的反應等等,這些觀察都需要清明的覺察力才能進行。受、心、法等處的觀照也需要有警醒的覺察力,倘若處於昏沉、游移當中,絕對無法觀照根塵相遇時「心」的苦樂感受,以及因此苦樂之受而起的欲念、瞋惡等變化,

還有這些變化本身的消長浮沉。由此可知,聲聞法的四念處 修行一定要在清明的覺觀下才能進行。

大乘的四念處修行也需要清明細膩的覺察力,假若是缺乏了清明的觀照力,那麼就無法擁有般若智慧,無般若智慧就無法指導修行者觀內身、外身、內外一時俱觀;也無法指導修行者在「觀身念處」後進一步地觀受念處、心念處與法念處。更無法直觀因緣和合下的身、受、心、法乃是不淨、無常、苦、空、無我,且是空無自性的。

由此可知,四念處的修行,若缺乏了清明的覺觀是無法 進行的。若再考慮四念處進行時所側重的點在於「當下」, 那就不難知道四念處修行的重點在於:(1)具備清明的覺 觀;(2)所觀的為「當下」的身、受、心、法。

(二) 聖嚴法師視四念處為漸法修行的基礎

聲聞乘十分重視四念處的修行,將它視為「向涅槃」的 基礎,如果這個基礎修行不夠穩固,那麼就無法踏上涅槃之 道了。聖嚴法師對四念處的理解是否仍保持著傳統的概念? 同時聲聞乘與大乘由於目的與指導方法的不同,對四念處的 修法產生了相當大的變異,但不論是大乘或聲聞乘,不論其 中的指導原則與所欲達成的目標為何,四念處的修行首重 「當下」,所用的方法是保持清醒的覺觀,這個基本的因素 在二十一世紀聖嚴法師的默照禪教學中,是否依然保存?

若從聖嚴法師的禪法教學來看,他對四念處的基本看法 是視它為漸法三無漏學中的基礎,這個基礎又以「五停心」 為根本,聖嚴法師云: 在佛教的經論裡,不同的「停心」方法都是為了移去粗重的情緒覆蓋,幫助修行者收攝散亂心,培養定力。但做為一種修行方法,它卻不是用來促進解脫智慧並獲得悟境的(儘管根器夠深的人不無可能單憑這種修練就迅速達到悟境)。不管是印度還是中國的各宗派系統都認為「五停心觀」的方法只是「四念處」的前導,後者才是專為讓人產生「無我」或「空」的解脫智慧。但反過來說,如果不是先有「五停心觀」讓我們達到定境,則「四念處」鎖定和拔除妄見的功能也將無法有效地發揮。

看來「五停心」與「四念處」在法師心中都屬於基礎的修 行,尤其是用來「幫助修行者收攝散亂心,培養定力」的 「五停心」更是基礎中的基礎,類似於「止」。而「四念 處」則在此基礎上進而拔除五蓋十惡,類似於「觀」。 「觀」以「止」為基礎,「止」則靠著「觀」而深化。而 這個「觀」,在法師的心中稱為「觀慧」或「有漏智」, 因為:

這種清明本身就是一種智慧或慧力,它與日常知覺的不同在於,它可以直接切入經驗的肌理。它被稱為「觀慧」或是「有漏智」(sāsrava-jñāna)。之所以用「有漏」二字來形容它,是因為這種智慧還是不圓滿的,不能和那種可以了悟「無我」的真正智慧等量齊觀。而它之所以被稱

為「觀慧」,則有兩個原因:首先,它的清明與精準是從 定而來的;其次是因為,這種清明與精準是深度探究心與 存在所不可少的。而「四念處」中的「念」字,指的就是 這種「觀慧」。

在聖嚴法師心中四念處的「念」是一種「觀慧」,這種智慧 雖然不是了悟無我之後的無漏智慧;但卻是邁向無我時的清 明與精準的智慧。它的清明建立在正見之上,它的精準則來 自於時時自我提撕所形成的專注與敏銳。這種專注敏銳的觀 察力,使我們能準確地掌握根塵相遇時,身、受、心、法的 改變。

法師對四念處的理解,固然讓我們明白它在傳統修行中的重要性。但這種「觀慧」是不是只存在於古老的印度修行法中?到了二十一世紀,在中國自行研發的禪宗裡是否依然可以找到它的身影?我們試以默照禪做為觀察對象來看一看這古老禪法,如今是否依然適用?

(三)聖嚴法師以四念處為默照禪的基礎

聖嚴法師教授的禪法大抵可分為兩種:一是話頭禪, 一是默照禪。此二者均為禪宗的修行法,表面上看來似乎與 印度的傳統修行毫無瓜葛,但若從二者均為佛教修行法,均 以解脫為目的來看,那麼它們之間不該毫無關係。正因為如 此,聖嚴法師在說明默照禪的基礎時直接指向「五停心」與

[●] 同註❷,頁 146。

「四念處」, 聖嚴法師云:

五停心、四念住是次第禪修,從觀呼吸、觀身體、觀心 念入手,是次第的修行方法。默照禪法,也是從呼吸法入 手,也是從觀身受著力。因此,默照的修行方法並非有什 麼奇特,也不是中國人沒有根據就發明的東西,它是以傳 統修行方法做基礎的。

在聖嚴法師而言,默照禪並非中國人無中生有的東西,而是依據「五停心」、「四念處」等傳統修行法為基礎所作的發展。這種看法固然為默照禪找到了歷史上正統的源頭。但當他提出這個看法時,馬上就會遇到一個難題,那就是在他心中默照禪乃是一種「無法之法」,不分次第,沒有分別的上乘之法;而「五停心」與「四念處」卻是傳統次第禪的修行法。一個「無法之法」怎會以次第法為基礎?而次第禪怎能發展成一種「無法之法」?對此,聖嚴法師云:

默照是從有次第到無次第。有次第是身體放鬆,心情放鬆,體驗呼吸、體驗身、受、心、法,這是結合五停心的觀息和觀身法門,進一步修四念住的。默照禪不落次第,面對身、受、心、法的任何現象,都採取不要管它的態度,只是清楚知道自己是在打坐。

四念住的次第觀名為「別相念」,整體的綜合觀名為「總相念」。禪宗是從總相念的基礎上,教我們只管打坐,便是默照禪的入門手段了。因為總相念是需要次第修行,而默照則是一開始就教我們不要管次第,只要求清楚地知道自己的身體是在打坐,呼吸也只是身體覺受的一部分,其他的問題不去管它,知道、放下,便是直接而簡單地在修默照禪了。個

從上述這一大段引文來看,默照禪雖然號稱「無法之法」,然而並不是說這個修行法本身雜亂無章,沒有次第可言。相反的,它有它清楚的進路,也有清楚的修行方法。它之所以被稱為「無法之法」是因為在進行默照禪法時,不論是「默」或是「照」,都必須抖落所有的羈絆,忘掉一切的雜念,到了精熟時甚至於連自我與方法都必須放下,由於此法講究一切放捨無依無傍,所以被稱為「無法之法」。

這樣看來,默照禪並不是毫無章法可言,而是一種在 修行時有其次第、有其方法,但在操作時又必須放下一切方 法的修行法門。難怪聖嚴法師要說「默照是從有次第到無次 第」的。

聖嚴法師這句話可分從兩個方面來說明:第一個方面是 從先行法到默照法,第二個方面則是從操作層面與操作內容 來看。若從第二個方面來分析時,默照禪的從有次第到無次 第,必須從兩個層次來看,第一個層次是從操作層面來看:

[●] 釋聖嚴,《聖嚴法師教默照禪》,臺北:法鼓文化,2004年4月,頁34。

⑤ 同註⑩,頁35。

在這個層面裡,默照禪可以被區分為三個階段●,各個階段都有自己的特色。第二個層次則是指默照禪的操作內容:在這個層面中修行者要做的只有觀照自己,放下干擾而已,不可執著也不可攀緣。如果說第一個層次是有次第可言的,那麼第二個層次就無次第的「無法之法」了。然而,第一個層次中任何一個階段的操作,其原則與方法都以第二個層次為原則、為指導。

在第一個方面,所謂的從有次第到無次第指的是,從 默照禪的先行法到默照本身。默照禪的先行法包含基本工夫 訓練,例如如何放鬆身體、情緒,以及體驗呼吸,體驗身、 受、心、法,如何學習放下等……,聖嚴法師認為這些基本 工夫乃是依據「五停心」與「四念處」發展而來的。但是運 用這些基本方法時,卻必須完全擺脫次第禪的方法,「只要 求清楚地知道自己的身體是在打坐」,不要再觀照根塵相遇 當下的身體了,只需完全將心力與精神收攝在身體上,進而 連身體也放捨。從先行法的訓練到默照禪的運用,這就是從 有次第進入無次第。

在此可以看出,聖嚴法師將默照禪的基礎建立在「五停心」與「四念處」的止、觀訓練上,但是從次第禪到默照禪的轉變過程究竟為何?這是個不能規避也無可規避的問題, 聖嚴法師並沒有含糊地帶過,他清楚地說明: 默照雖是大乘禪法,但是基礎跟五停心與四念處相關, 所以默照禪一開始時先用照,也就是觀;觀照成功,也就 是清楚地觀到心安定,不受內境與外境的影響而產生波 動,那就是默。\$\overline{6}\$

由此觀之,默照禪對「五停心」與「四念處」的繼承並非一成不變地照單全收,而是有所去取的。默照雖也強調對身體的覺知,但並不像「四念處」這樣的鎖定在身體的動作、狀況、或反應上,也不在乎身體的組成,屍骸的分解等。在承繼四念處的方面,它只是藉由觀察身體的痠痛麻癢,學習收攝心念。而在承繼「五停心」上,則是轉化為放下所有的痠痛麻癢,任由它去痠、去麻,不因這些身體反應而影響「我在打坐」的事實。由此可知,這些先行的訓練到默照禪的實施時,大抵上只剩原則性的指導,具體的操作方法已完全改變了。

(四)從四念處到默照禪

聖嚴法師認為默照禪的先行基礎是「四念處」與「五停心」。但默照禪對「四念處」的紹繼只有原則性的部分,操作的部分已經完全不同。所謂「原則」上的繼承,是指二者均以「觀」做為方法,也都強調「當下」的重要性。但在實際操作的部分,即使都強調「當下」,但針對當下的身、受、心、法也有不同的「觀」法。以下略舉數項說明之。

❸ 見上文所述,亦見《牛的印跡》,頁 233-241;或見《無法之法》,頁 38-39、64。默照禪雖區分為三個階段,但此三階段並非固定不變,有些 修行者可能在第一個階段就證悟空性,不需歷經二與三;有些也可能在 第二階段就悟道了。

⑤ 同註**②**,頁90。

1. 全體與部分

「四念處」的修行十分強調「當下」的一面,不論是「身念處」中的「觀」身體當下的動作、呼吸、身體的反應,均是以「當下」的身體做為觀察的對象。乃至於觀察根塵相遇時的覺受、心念、心法的變化,也是以「當下」反應與變化為對象。

而默照禪也一樣,從第一個階段起,無時無刻不在觀照「當下」的自我。例如在第一個階段中,修行者必須保持明覺,覺知「當下」的自己正在打坐,也必須覺知到正在打坐的自己腿痠、腳麻、腰痛、背癢的事實,這是屬於「照」的部分。同時也必須明白對付這些痠、痛、麻、癢最好的方法是「默」,聖嚴法師說:

你很清楚知道坐在那裡。這種清楚明白就是照。但如果 被痠、痛、癢這些感受分心呢?如果不回應,這就是默, 就是只管打坐,也就是默照修習的開始階段。₩

聖嚴法師教導修行者面對痠、痛、麻、癢最好的方法,就是知道身體在痠、在麻、在痛、在癢時,讓「心」就停留在這份覺知中,但不回應那份痠、痛、麻、癢,將「心」保留在覺知裡,去「觀」身體發生的現象,但不參與現象,不反映現象,只保留在無所有的空靈中,不回顧也不黏滯在任何情況中,讓「心」自由地去「觀」「當下」的自己。聖嚴法師云:

在只管打坐時觀空,要完全處於當下。當完全處於當下一刻時,身體意識會逐漸消逝,不執著於過去或未來,到 頭來連現在也消逝了。你的心該放在哪裡呢?心應該就只 是安住在這澄明、開放的覺知中,擺脫所有的念頭。這就 是觀空。

第一階段的默照禪就強調「當下」這一點,很像「身念處」 的修行。然而「身念處」的修行所要觀照的是身體的動作、 呼吸、組織成分及反應等等。而默照禪所觀照的是全身。雖 然也是藉著呼吸、痠痛麻癢等現象為手段,但是它的目的並 不在觀察這些現象與反應所帶來的改變,而在於繫念於身, 藉著意念專注於全身而停止妄念紛飛的產生。

其次,「身念處」修行的目的,除了藉著觀照身體組成,屍骸分解形成不淨觀之外,其餘的觀照目的在藉著觀察這些改變而明白無常、無我的實相。而默照禪的第一個階段,則藉由明白「我在打坐」的事實,覺知到整個身體都在打坐,從而學習到讓「心」安住於「澄明、開放的覺知中,擺脫所有的念頭」,最後連身體的感覺都消泯了。

這個方法看來比身念處更直接,因為身念處的目的在於明白無常、無我,而默照禪卻直指空性而去。

2. 向外與向內

第二階段的默照禪仍然強調「當下」的重要性,只是將 覺知的範圍從自身擴大到周遭環境而已。讓環境成為自我,

⁶ 同註**8**, 頁 47。

像是一個我可以感知的「身體」一樣,去感知環境中的林林 總總。不論是鳥飛、樹搖,或是煙消、雲散等等,修行者必 須保持著靈敏而空靈的覺知去察覺環境的變化。正如同在第 一階段中一樣,修行者雖然覺知身體的痠痛麻癢,但卻不回 應、不理睬。同樣的,在第二階段裡,對於環境的千變萬 化,修行者也同樣要覺察,要明白,但卻不要回應,不讓自 己陷入感覺、情緒或環境中。

第二階段的默照禪仍然是強調「當下」的重要,覺知環境、包攝環境的默照所關注的仍是「當下」的情形。這時默照並非「向內而照」,並非觀照自身的錯誤、自身的結構;而是「向外而觀」,面對外在的環境。修行者以一顆開放的心,不帶自身經驗或有色眼鏡來將環境攝入自身,來將它做為觀照的對象,但卻不黏著在這對象上,只將心放在覺知本身。

在修行中修行者若被環境牽引或干擾時,必須立刻回到 覺照本身來。這個訓練可以讓念頭生滅成為被覺照的對象, 修行者從而明白念頭不是「我」、不是主體。進而明白主體 的成立是因為要覺知客體的存在,如果客體本身是生滅不 已、是變換不停的,那麼又何來永恆不變的主體?在緣起之 下主、客皆空。這種深刻的看法雖然也是念處觀的運用,但 其所能獲致的境界,卻不是四念處所能達到的境界。

3. 無分別與分別

第三個階段,仍然是處於「當下」的狀態,這個狀態是 第二階段的擴大與延續。第二階段中已將周遭環境完全納入 自己的觀照當中,讓萬事萬物以自己的本來面目呈現在修行 者眼前,不受修行者意願的切割,也不受個人概念的干擾。 然而,無論如何,它們畢竟是呈現在修行者心中的狀況。即 便修行者已明白諸法均是因緣條件的聚散,無所謂的主、客 之分,但這個概念仍是建立在「我」之上的。到了第三個階 段,不但是環境消失了,連「我」也隨之而逝,心澄明的如 晴空、萬里無雲,沒有我、也沒有非我,無分別、也無統一 可言,剩下的只是一覽無遺的無涯無際,除了靈明的覺知之 外一無所有。

「四念處」雖強調「當下」的種種,但仍宥限於身、受、心、法當中,不論是身體的動作、反映或是根塵相遇下的覺受、心態與其中法的變化,所觀照的對象乃是當下的種種變化。換言之,在這當中主、客是清楚的、是二分的,做為主體的覺觀清清楚楚地觀照著客體的念頭,觀察它的變化與轉換。「四念處」的修行到此為止,但是默照禪卻在這之後向前開展,不僅「默」去環境的干擾,也「默」掉個人的概念,使得事物得以本來面目呈現。「四念處」的修行如果不在「正見」的指導之下,很難保證觀察所得是完全正確的。而默照因為一直在「默」除先見的弊病與環境的影響,期待在一顆清明無擾的智慧下,讓事物的本相呈現出來,所以較不易走向錯誤的方向。

六、結論

「四念處」的修行早從世尊的時代就開始了,這個以身 體做為老師的修行法門,首先借重身體的呼吸、動作、組成 因素、分解毀敗等現象來觀察生命的實質,而後藉由內六處 與外六塵的接觸,觀察吾人在根塵相遇之後「受」、「心」 與「法」上的變化,最後因此明白身不淨、受不樂、心無 常、法無我的實相。

「四念處」自提出之後,不論是大乘或二乘都使用它來 修行。大乘將二乘的無常、無我推向究極之處,得出因緣所 生法、其性本空的結論。空性的提出使其不再以出世為高, 轉而以人間教化為目標,讓佛學揮灑出另一片亮麗的天空。

而時隔世異,當二十一世紀的今天,在臺灣的寺院中, 這個古老的法門還存不存在?如果聖嚴法師只是將四念處視 為漸法三無漏學的基礎,那麼,它就仍然是留存在歷史的記 憶。但由於法師又將它視為默照禪的基礎工夫,因此四念處 就不再是櫥窗中的古董,而是歷久彌新的修行法門了。

聖嚴法師認為默照禪中覺知身心的方法源自於「四念處」;擯斥妄念,放下萬緣的法門來自於「五停心」,這個看法使得默照禪接續上歷史上正統的修行法脈。如果將五停心視為「止」,四念處視為「觀」;默照禪中的「默」也具有「止」的意味,而「照」則十足的是個「觀」法。從二者都是「止觀」的運用看來,的確是有相似之處。

但是畢竟屬於頓法的默照禪,不等於屬於漸法的四念處、五停心。雖然二者都強調「當下」的重要性,但是「四念處」強調的「當下」是在根塵相遇之處——觀照,不論是身體的動作、呼吸的短長、組織的成分和屍骸的分解,或是根塵相遇時覺受的苦樂,心因此苦樂而生起的欲念、瞋惡,乃至於這些欲念瞋惡的生長消息。而默照禪的第一個階段則是以全身做為觀想的對象,並不特別專注於身上某部位的痠

痛麻癢,只藉著這些痠痛麻癢讓自己知道自己正在打坐, 同時藉著不去回應痠痛麻癢,來讓心念安住於清明的覺知 當中。

其次,「四念處」對「當下」的覺知強調向內的部分, 向內以身體當下的動作、呼吸、反應,「心」在根塵相遇時 的覺受,因覺受而生的迎拒,因迎拒自身的生滅變化等,凡 此種種觀照的角度莫不是「向內」的。然而默照禪的第二階 段,卻勢將觀照的角度轉而向外。會轉向外的原因在於,修 行者在第一階段已學會將心念安住於無所有的覺知中,到了 第二階段將覺知的對象擴大到周遭的環境,讓環境在不受 觀察者本身的成見與有色眼鏡干擾下,完全地呈現出本來 而目。

最後,「四念處」對「當下」的觀察,是以根塵相遇之 處為主要目標,在這修行中覺知者與被觀察者清楚地分別出 來。但默照禪到了第三階段,主要在破除「我」的存在,讓 心念在緣起性空的實相之下,安住於無念、無住當中。

默照禪的修行原則雖然與四念處相關,但它的實際操作及其結果卻早已不是「四念處」所能囿限的了。它對四念處、五停心的繼承,說明了「止觀」在佛教修行法中的重要性與不可替代性;而它對四念處、五停心的改變,說明了「止觀」在時空轉移下的發展與高度的彈性。

參考文獻

一、佛典文獻

後秦·佛陀耶舍、竺佛念譯,《長阿含經》,《大正新脩大藏經》 第1冊。

東晉·僧伽提婆譯,《中阿含經》,《大正新脩大藏經》第1冊。

後秦·鳩摩羅什譯,《大智度論》,《大正新脩大藏經》第25冊。

二、現代文獻

釋聖嚴、丹·史蒂文生著,梁永安譯,《牛的印跡:禪修與開悟見性的道路》,臺北:商周出版社,2011年1月。

釋聖嚴著,單德興譯,《無法之法》,臺北,法鼓文化,2009年8 月。

釋聖嚴,《聖嚴法師教默照禪》,臺北:法鼓文化,2004年4月。

釋聖嚴,《聖嚴法師教禪坐》,臺北:法鼓文化,2007年1月。

釋聖嚴,《三十七道品講記》,臺北:法鼓文化,2011年5月。

釋聖嚴著,約翰·克魯克編輯、導讀、評註,《如月印空》,臺 北:法鼓文化,2009年5月。

釋聖嚴,《禪修菁華集⑤:默照》,臺北:法鼓文化,2012年7日。

釋聖嚴,《禪修菁華集⑥:五停心·四念處》,臺北:法鼓文化, 2012年7月。

On the *Smṛtyupasthāna* and Master Sheng-Yen's Silent-Illumination Meditation

Yen-Chiu Tu

Professor, Department of Chinese Literature, National Chengchi University

Abstract

The smrtyupasthāna (four foundations of mindfulness) is regarded as basic ways of practice in the *Āgama*. The "mindfulness of the body" emphasises current understandings of the states of body, including the breath, the composition of body, and how it decomposes and transforms after death. The "mindfulness of feelings or sensations" requires observations on sensations, such as suffering, pleasure, and neither-pleasure-nor-suffering (adukkhāmasukha), that are aroused when the six sensory roots confront with the six blemishes (sensed objects). The "mindfulness of mind or consciousness" lays stress on current observations on the mind and its state: desirous/non-desirous, angry, or ignorant. The "mindfulness of dhammā" requires observations on the dhammā aroused in the mind and its transformations as the sensory roots confront with the blemishes. In Mahāyāna Buddhism, a "method of differentiation" (異法門) is added to the four foundations of mindfulness. It claims it necessary to traverse through the śrāvaka-dharmā and realises the aspect of impurity, impermanence, suffering, and śūnyatā, in order to grasp the true nature (tattvasya-laksanam; 實相) of body, sensations, mind, and *dhammā*.

For Master Sheng-Yen (聖嚴法師), the *smṛṭyupasthāna* is considered as, firstly, the foundation of the threefold training $(sikkh\bar{a})$ which belongs to the practices with gradualness and, secondly, the foundation of silent-illumination meditation (默照禪). We can see that wisdom as ancient as the *smṛṭyupasthāna* is still frequently evoked even in silent-illumination meditation. However, although the practice of silent illumination derives from the five serene contemplations (五停心) and the *smṛṭyupasthāna*, its actual operation is totally different from that of the latter. Because of its methodological refinement, the silent-illumination meditation can achieve a goal that has never been reached by the five serene contemplations and the *smṛṭyupasthāna*, which only serve as the basis of Buddhist $s\bar{a}dhan\bar{a}$.

Therefore, it may be proper to claim that such ancient a method of practice still lives alive in contemporary Chan practices, though in different looks and postures. In other words, although the silent-illumination meditation of Master Sheng-Yen is a special mode of teaching and training catering for the development of modern society, it never goes too far from ancient wisdom and traditions.

Key words: Smṛtyupasthāna (four foundations of mindfulnesses), silent-illumination meditation, Master Sheng-Yen, Chan

「心靈環保」組織 ——二十一世紀之「修行型組織」

釋果光

法鼓山教團都監

▋摘要

法鼓山創辦人於二〇〇九年二月三日圓寂後,在失去 組織精神領袖之情況下,法鼓山僧團仍秉承創辦人的悲願, 繼續帶領僧俗四眾推動理念。幾年來,在創辦人奠定的深厚 基礎下,團體雖仍穩定地持續運作,然亦面臨內外種種的情 勢。故在創辦人圓寂五週年之際,筆者以都監的角色,試圖 探索適合佛教道場的組織型態及運作方式。深切思考如何突 破現況?如何面對當今的時代情勢、整體教團的現況,反省 目前的缺失,重新思考如何以法鼓山的核心「心靈環保」做 為領眾及營運的核心,開創法鼓山的新局面?

這篇論文是記錄及探索筆者運用三種漢傳禪觀,即話 頭禪、默照禪、觀音法門領眾的過程,試圖找到組織的定位 與適合的運作模式。透過筆者及參與者的行動與反省交錯之 影響力量,探究組織領眾者如何帶領大眾,突破法鼓山的現 況,朝向符合修行、心靈環保內涵的組織方向建構。

首先,以臨濟宗的話頭法門,深究內省,敏銳地自我覺察,洞悉組織的問題與解決問題的核心所在,並以話頭的力 道來突破困境、開展契機。第二,以曹洞宗的默照法門,綜 觀全局,規畫出「心靈環保組織」的藍圖。其中包括理念及 方向之導正、組織架構之簡化、僧俗四眾人才之培育,引導 教團回歸深化教育及關懷、淨化社會風氣、形塑組織文化之 方向。

第三,修行觀音法門,透過自利的耳根圓通法門,智 慧轉境;更以利他的聞聲救苦精神,慈悲利他,開展智慧與 慈悲的力量。過程中,化解阻力為助力,引領僧俗四眾從二 〇一四「和樂無諍」的一年,邁向二〇一五年的「光明遠 大」。最後,總結以心靈環保為核心、心六倫為軌範、心五 四為方法,達到四種環保境界的組織,將會是引導二十一世 紀的「修行型組織」。

關鍵詞:心靈環保、「心靈環保」組織、修行型組織、漢傳 禪觀

一、前言

面對全球的社會、經濟、環保、生態等情勢,法鼓山創辦人聖嚴法師於一九八九年開始呼籲發起「心靈環保」運動 ● ,訂一九九二年為「心靈環保」年,並在跨入二十一世紀之際,積極於「世界宗教暨精神領袖和平高峰會」、「世界經濟論壇」、「地球憲章」等會議中倡導之。法師所提倡的「心靈環保」,實是融合了佛法的慈悲與智慧,並從兩個層面推動;一是學佛禪修的層面;二是法鼓山理念的層面,包括「四種環保」、「心五四運動」、及「心六倫」。 ② 這是不分古今、地域、宗教、族群、生活背景的;是為了號召更多人成為「心靈環保」的工作者與實踐者,朝向「提昇人的品質,建設人間淨土」之理念推動。

二〇〇九年二月三日法鼓山創辦人聖嚴法師圓寂,僧團雖已做了種種的準備,讓佛事順利地進行。但當看到電視的專訪,佛教歷史學家江燦騰先生的評論:「聖嚴圓寂後,除非能即時培養出有魅力的接班人,否則不出兩年,法鼓山就會面臨崩解。」③讓僧團產生了強烈的危機意識。筆者的心

^{● 「}從一九八九年起,又在國內提倡建設人間淨土的理念,響應環境衛生、保育自然生態、珍惜自然資源的號召。同時呼籲發起『心靈環保』的運動。」(《聖嚴法師心靈環保》,臺北:法鼓文化,2004年,頁3)

② 参考聖嚴法師於二○○三年十月二十三日於北京大學之演講〈從東亞思想談現代人的心靈環保〉,收錄於《學術論考Ⅱ》,頁 58(《法鼓全集》3-9,臺北:法鼓文化,2005年)。「心六倫」則於二○○七年六月三十日在臺北市圓山飯店辦理《新時代心倫理》座談會中提出。

❸ 見二○○九年二月四日《蘋果日報》,〈果東法師接班 續禪宗法脈〉。

境如二〇〇九年所發表〈悲願傳承——法鼓山僧伽教育之回 顧與展望〉一文中提到:

法鼓山第二代的僧眾,如何傳承創辦人的悲願?如何跟隨創辦人的腳步,繼續完成太虛大師「建僧」的心願?如何建立一個依法、依律而住的清淨僧團,亦是不與社會脫節的「現代化的僧團」?如何建制完整的僧伽教育體系,培養出三大教育的僧才,來弘揚漢傳禪佛教?推動世界淨化?這些課題,均是法鼓山僧團面臨的挑戰。◆

當時筆者在教育單位奉獻,透過教授《六祖壇經》、禪宗法脈、漢傳禪觀等課程,以深入禪宗祖師的內心世界;並定期參加禪期、擔任禪七總護③、小參,實際體驗禪法及領眾禪修;更藉由撰寫與創辦人思想相關的論文,走入創辦人的內心世界。在禪法思想、實踐,及教學相長的過程中,一方面藉此親近歷代禪師及創辦人,學習更深入的禪法;另方面因曾於二〇〇五年至二〇〇八年間擔任行政中心副執行長④,因而留下一個疑問:什麼是適合道場的組織運作模式?如何將漢

網址:www.appledaily.com.tw/appledaily/article/headline/20090204/31365008/ 果東法師接班續禪宗法脈。

- 見財團法人伽耶山基金會出版之《比丘尼的天空》,頁 127。
- **⑤** 總護:禪七當中的總負責者,負責照顧內護人員、外護人員,及禪眾。
- 行政中心副執行長為行政中心的最高主管,統籌體系內之人力資源、財會、總務、資訊、公關文宣、活動、信眾服務等單位;在僧團內部稱為副都監,對外稱為副執行長。

傳禪法、心靈環保運用在組織運作中?二〇〇八年八月回到 教育單位,這個疑問仍在內心中醞釀著,並從禪宗文獻、創 辦人的禪法中,探索答案。

二○一三年三月五日,筆者再度從教育單位回到行政體系,並擔任法鼓山教團都監查,經過第一年的觀察與思考,過去的疑問繼續發酵:道場組織是否有別於企業組織、非營利組織型態?應該是什麼樣的組織型態?都監的角色是什麼?如何領眾?

過去擔任副執行長時,試圖尋求企業顧問為組織設計 組織架構、運作方式,不斷地學習經營管理的運作模式;然 而,經過數年禪法的熏習,自然地運用了三種漢傳禪觀:話 頭禪、默照禪、觀音法門於領眾上,為道場組織尋求定位及 組織型態。

(一) 漢傳禪觀

在創辦人所留下的著作及文獻中,以一九九八年與達賴喇嘛對談前,草擬的〈漢傳佛教傳承發展系統表〉®,最能見到禪宗的核心:

- ◆ 都監原為中國禪寺的執事之一,督管全寺庶務。在法鼓山教團,為方丈 和尚之下,統籌整體各體系、各單位部門行政事務的職位;相當於一般 組織的總經理、執行長職。
- 〈漢傳佛教傳承發展系統表〉,聖嚴法師於一九九八年五月一日草擬於 紐約。

這個核心,正點出歷代禪師語錄中的精華:消融自我中心、禪法在日常生活中,更與創辦人提倡「心靈環保」的兩個層面:佛學禪修、法鼓山理念相呼應。

創辦人這一生所指導的禪修法門,包括數息觀、話頭禪、默照禪、念佛禪、及觀音法門。筆者於一九九二年底參加美國紐約東初禪寺的禪七,開始用話頭禪法。這些年來,雖也學習過各種禪法,逐漸將方法集中於話頭禪、默照禪、觀音法門三者。

話頭禪法的關鍵在「疑」!是一種以「疑情」為方法的禪法。疑情,是一種想知道的力量,可以帶動修行者透過一句話頭,如「什麼是無?」、「念佛是誰?」、「什麼是我的本來面目?」等,由念話頭、問話頭、參話頭之層次,由疑情形成疑團,向內探索直至見到本性,再進入看話頭層次的修行過程。◆

默照禪法的關鍵在「捨」! ● 是一種不斷地放下現有所緣境,擴大所緣境而觀照整體的過程。創辦人教授默照禪法,是由放鬆身心、觀全身、觀全境、觀內外無限,而達到絕觀默照之境界。此時,不以能觀和所觀為境,但是默而常照,照而常默。●

觀音法門的關鍵在「觀音」! ② 可以是持觀音菩薩聖 號、持咒,亦可以是觀聲音,包括大自然的聲音及眾生的各

整理三種禪觀的層次如表一 4 。

表一:三種漢傳禪觀調心層次

調心層次		散亂心→	集中心→	統一心→	無心
	話頭禪	念話頭	問話頭	參話頭	看話頭
方法	默照禪	身心放鬆	觀全身	觀全境 觀內外無限	絕觀默照
	觀音法門	散心念觀音	專心念觀音	一心念觀音	無相念觀音

在領眾的過程中,如何將此三種漢傳禪觀運用在日常生活中、組織運作、待人接物之中,從中觀照自己,放下自我中心,以能利益他人;一直是筆者嘗試實踐之處,也試圖將實踐過程,以研究的方式記錄及整理出來。

[●] 話頭禪法參考《聖嚴法師教話頭禪》,臺北:法鼓文化,2009年。

[●] 默照禪法參考《聖嚴法師教默照禪》,臺北:法鼓文化,2004年。

[●] 參考《兩千年行腳》,臺北:法鼓文化,2000年,頁 165。

❷ 觀音法門參考《聖嚴法師教觀音法門》,臺北:法鼓文化,2003年。

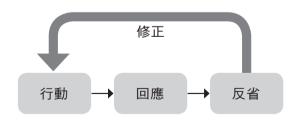
參考《聖嚴法師教淨土法門》,頁213-219(臺北:法鼓文化,2010年):有相到無相念佛的過程與方法,有相念佛為散心念佛、專心念佛、 一心念佛;念佛與持觀音聖號,方法相同,故此處將念佛改為念觀音。

[●] 參考拙著〈《六祖壇經》「一行三昧」的當代實踐〉,發表於二〇一〇年九月十日至十一日在廣州舉辦之「廣東禪宗六祖文化節學術研討會──六祖禪的傳承與發展」,網址:http://www.gdbuddhism.org/html/czyj/detail 2013 08/22/501.html。

(二)研究方法

這篇論文是記錄及探索筆者運用三種漢傳禪觀領眾的過程,試圖找到組織的定位與適合的運作模式。透過筆者及參與者的行動與反省交錯之影響力量,探究組織領眾者如何帶領大眾,突破法鼓山的現況,朝向符合修行、心靈環保內涵的組織方向建構。這個過程中,筆者身為領眾者,如何面臨組織的瓶頸?如何洞悉下手處?如何開展契機?如何面對種種的助力與阻力?領眾者是如何透過自省引導參與者成為助力?如何結合助力,形成轉變團體的正向動能?又如何面對阻力,轉化阻力為動力,化解阻力為助力?這些問題,成為這篇論文探討與分析的核心。

為了組織的開創,筆者帶著工作團隊,透過無數的討論,逐步形成專案團隊,共同體驗過程。由於專案形成過程,並非一蹴即成,而是透過「行動→反應→反省→修正行動→反應→……」一種螺旋式向上的過程,如圖一:



圖一:行動研究過程

這樣的做法,原單純是以修行為基礎的方式進行,如同 創辦人在《我願無窮》一書中所述:

從佛法的角度來看,世事往往是無法預先規畫完成的, 而是因勢利導,隨順因緣,慢慢走來。**⑤**

本篇論文探討自二〇一三年三月五日法鼓山僧團代表會 議通過筆者接任都監,至二〇一四年六月九日僧團代表會議 確認「心靈環保」組織止,筆者面臨的問題、洞悉契機及尋 求解決的過程。研究期間的資料來源,包括了相關的會議紀 錄、電子郵件往來、手機簡訊、筆者的反省紀錄等。

- 釋聖嚴,《我願無窮:美好的晚年開示集》,臺北:法鼓文化,2011 年,頁344。
- ⑥ Kurt Lewin (1944) 首次提出 Action Research 這個名相,相關文獻為: Lewin K. The Dynamics of Group Action. From Educational leadership 4, New York: Henri Holt. In: Gold M, ed. The Complete Social Scientist: A Kurt Lewin Reader; 1944. Washington, DC: American Psychological Association; 1999, pp. 195-200.
- Oconnelly, F. M., & Clandinin, D. J. (1990). "Stories of Experience and Narrative Inquiry". *Educational Researcher*, 19(5), 2-14.

 Colombo, M. (2003, May). "Reflexivity and Narratives in Action Research: A Discursive Approach". In *Forum: Qualitative Social Research*, 4(2).

研究期間可以分為兩階段,剛接都監第一年(二〇一三年三月五日至二〇一四年三月八日)可以稱為醞釀期,之後則進入形成期階段。醞釀期階段,筆者主要是運用話頭禪法,此段時期筆者只是探索、參究,尚沒有行動產生,故採用敘事的論述。進入形成期階段後,筆者以默照禪法、觀音法門為主要修行法門,並開始採取行動、組成團隊,故以行動研究論述之。

研究期間,僧眾們透過各種管道,不斷地提出僧團需要面對及解決的問題,為此,筆者與團隊於二〇一四年三月九日開始至六月九日,進行了二十五場的溝通會議及決策會議,逐漸整理出調整方案。每次的會議與會者都提供豐富的建議,讓筆者不斷地反思、修正規畫,形成一個良性的循環,亦使團體形成修行的氛圍。除此之外,更有無數次的規畫討論會議,以及與各單位的溝通會議,期許透過會議溝通,能使組織調整之事,呈現公開、透明、參與的方向進行。過程中的每次會議均做了詳細的紀錄,成為最重要的研究資料。

就此研究而言,筆者為研究者,同時也是專案的領眾者 (Project Leader);本研究的參與者,包括專案會務小組、 專案團隊、組織單位所有成員、會議參與成員、專家、顧 問、禪修指導繼程法師。所有參與者,除繼程法師外,均以 匿名方式處理。

在論文結構上,筆者以三種漢傳禪觀的運用為結構。 首先,探討筆者接任都監執事的第一年,對「都監」角色產 生的疑情。這一年,如何以臨濟宗的話頭法門,探究「都監 是誰?」。這段深究內省,敏銳地自我覺察過程,不僅體會「都監即總護」的角色定位,亦洞悉組織的問題、關鍵因素、及解決問題的契機。

第二,筆者如何以總護的角色扮演都監一執,依曹洞宗的默照法門,綜觀全局,規畫出「修行型組織」。其中包括理念及方向之導正、組織架構之簡化、僧俗四眾人才之培育,引導教團回歸教育及關懷之理念,超越募款之氛圍,更分析教團在調整過程中所面臨的種種助力及阻力。

第三,筆者在提出組織調整的行動之初,感受到無形的壓力席捲而來,再度產生的自省能力,如何引導筆者透過漢傳的觀音法門,開展智慧與慈悲的力量,結合眾人之力,化阻力為助力。過程中,筆者與參與者的互動,產生「觀察→自省→行動→反應→觀察→自省→行動→……」的一個螺旋式的正向前進動力,其中包含阻力與助力交互影響。筆者覺察到接受他人的善意,影響筆者及整個團體;筆者的清楚表達善意也影響大眾,而逐漸地化阻力為助力。

最後,總結心靈環保組織的建構過程,便是修行的過程。一方面透過佛法、漢傳禪佛教的實踐,另方面是以心靈 環保為核心,以心六倫為軌範、心五四為方法,達到四種環 保境界的組織,將會是引導二十一世紀的「修行型組織」。

二、參究「都監是誰?」

一般對話頭禪法的印象,是在禪堂專心參究的修行方法,然大慧宗杲禪師強調日常生活中、辦公、與人互動時, 都是提話頭的時機,如《大慧普覺禪師語錄》中所示: 畫三夜三孜孜矻矻,茶裡、飯裡,喜時、怒時,淨處、 穢處,妻兒聚頭處,與賓客相酬酢處,辦公家職事處,了 私門婚嫁處,都是第一等做工夫提撕舉底時節。❸

此論點深深吸引筆者,成為多年來的努力方向。當在禪 堂禪修時綿密參話頭,固然較能專注及得力,然畢竟進禪堂 的時間較少,所以在平時各種場合及情境中,也期許能用上 工夫。在生活中提話頭:「什麼是無?」亦成為筆者平時的 練習;尤其當遇到境界時,話頭所引起的疑情力量會增強, 很希望能從現象的變化中見到實相。但到底是什麼呢?是筆 者內心的疑!

這樣的力量,在初接都監執事的第一年,向內探索的力量逐漸增強,包括自我及組織的探索。此章節將敘述話頭對筆者產生的內省力量,及體會到法鼓山的內部轉機與外部契機。

(一)話頭的內省力量

筆者多年在法鼓山上擔任僧伽大學(簡稱僧大)副院長,專心於教學、禪修帶領及開展「心靈環保經濟學」研究領域。僧團執事調整的決定,讓筆者感受到強大的震盪與壓力。 筆者雖曾於二〇〇五年至二〇〇八年間擔任過行政中心副執行長兩年半,然在二〇〇八年八月回到僧伽大學後,對整體的行 政運作已日趨生疏;再加上創辦人圓寂後,一心想以教學、研究、培養僧才來報師恩,領眾執事所要承擔的責任及面對各種情況的壓力,讓筆者深感衝擊。此衝擊對長年用話頭禪法的筆者,卻又產生了一股新的力量,讓筆者向內探索。

1. 都監是誰?

近幾年來,創辦人的法子,馬來西亞繼程法師,每年都 到法鼓山指導禪修,筆者也常有機會在繼程法師主持的禪七 中擔任總護的角色。當法師得知筆者擔任都監之訊息後,於 二〇一三年三月九日與筆者有段手機簡訊對話**®**,可表達筆 者當時的心情:

繼程:據可靠消息,您上任都監之職了。

要說恭喜 還是辛苦你了?

果光:如臨深淵,如履薄冰。

繼程:那就是:辛苦你了。

但應該更能讓你發揮吧?

果光:那要看參禪的功夫了。公案很多啦!

繼程:參!

都監是誰?

都監能當總護嗎?

接任都監執事最大的壓力,來自必須了解組織的整體狀況,面對人事、行政運作的情況,並尋求改善之道。畢竟這不

⑤ 《大慧普覺禪師語錄》第 21 卷, CBETA, T47, No. 1998A, p. 899, c23-p. 900, a3。

❷ 此簡訊內容,徵得繼程法師的同意使用。

只是個單純的寺院,還包括文化事業、教育事業、慈善、各地 寺院、工程、基金會、護法等等。筆者過去曾參與的領域並不 全面,所以當時筆者感到是「如臨深淵,如履薄冰」,需要小 心翼翼地面對所有的狀況。而很多的問題存在已久,長年一直 無法解決,故筆者稱之為無法解開的公案②。與繼程法師的 這段對話,當下雖沒有產生任何激盪,無意間卻開啟了筆者 的疑情:「都監是誰?」

筆者對都監這個角色定位,處在很疑惑的狀態。一般 營利及非營利組織都有所謂的經營管理人,有幾種可能的稱 呼:董事長、總裁、總經理、執行長等等。而道場的經營管 理執事名稱,則稱為方丈、都監。法鼓山教團的最高領導者 是方丈,對外代表法鼓山。而都監,是對內統籌各單位的運 作,相當於一般企業總裁、總經理、執行長之職位。

然當大家以企業管理或非營利組織的職稱解釋「都監」 這個執事的角色,讓從未有企業管理經驗的筆者很難揣摩, 感到非常地困惑。即使可以從書本中找到相關資料,但卻是 很抽象的說明,到底要如何扮演這個角色?如同禪修一般, 只能透過親身的嘗試與體驗,才能真正明白是怎麼回事。

不難想像,這個執事的第一年,筆者處在混沌階段,除 需要熟悉各部門的狀況,也要處理人事問題,更經常面臨資 深護法居士及僧團法師以信件、電話、當面方式,表達對組織的看法。其中包括對僧團法師、體系專職人員、地區義工菩薩的看法,組織運作的問題,甚至法鼓山的整體方向等。 筆者如同一個新手領眾者,千頭萬緒,不知如何就序;甚至讓搭配的執事法師們,難以順暢地協助。

這一年,筆者面對所處的種種現象,只能參「都監 是誰?」。

2. 都監即總護

到了二〇一四年初,正是筆者進入僧團二十週年、創辦 人圓寂五週年、接任都監之職將滿一年之際,內心處在困頓 中,甚至當聽到資深護法對僧眾的批評時,對從事多年的僧 教育產生懷疑,是否真的朝著創辦人的悲願「建僧」方向?

三月初某日,筆者在安排及處理人的問題時,被問到, 為何方式變來變去?筆者直覺地回應,如同擔任總護時,看 到禪眾的變化,會有不同的因應方式。這個互動剎那間,體 會到,原來「都監即總護」!教育、修行、禪修、奉獻、行 政、營運、人事,都是同一件事!無非就是漢傳禪法、「心 靈環保」的落實!

當以總護的角度看待整個體系的運作,開始明白該如何運作,也明白過去一年,有很多的作為不符合總護應有的動作。如同在禪堂,總護扮演的角色是照顧內護、照顧外護,更照顧禪眾;給予禪眾清楚的方向,往前走。反省過去一年所做所為,並沒有扮演一個稱職的總護,或說還只是個初學總護吧!當有了這樣的體會,突然想起繼程法師去年在筆者剛接都監時的簡訊互動,此時竟然有所領會了,真的很特別

^{● 《}雲棲法彙(選錄)》第15卷:「公案者,公府之案牘也,所以剖斷是非。而諸祖問答機緣,亦只為剖斷生死,故以名之。」本意是官府斷案的公文案牘,禪宗指師徒間的問答機緣;由於禪師間的對答故事,後人很難理解,故筆者稱難解決之事為公案。(CBETA, J33, No. B277, p. 78, c26-27)

的渦程!

二〇一四年舊曆年後,輾轉獲得繼程法師致贈的一幅直 書對聯:「果然有智慧,光照無分別!」到了三月八日,筆 者與繼程法師的簡訊對話如下:

果光:接都監滿一年了,好快喔!

記得去年剛接時,法師說:參!都監可以當總護嗎?

最近的體會是:都監即總護!

只是當了一年昏庸的總護啦!

感恩法師給予的指導。

我練習:果然有智慧,光照無分別!

香港覺直長老幾年前送我的字是:果毅神光。

對聯、橫批都準備好了喔!

太棒了!

繼程:恭喜

果然好嘢!

光繼續照!

這段簡訊對話,剛好離上次與繼程法師的簡訊對話,整整一年。這份體會讓筆者的心態,向上提昇,能以帶領禪修的心,真正地面對、接受都監的執事,做該做的事情。

(二)法鼓山內外情勢

當體會到「都監即總護」,筆者開始以總護的角度,綜

觀全局,思考如何照顧僧眾、照顧專職、照顧信眾,並發揮 組織的力量,為社會安定、世界和平而奉獻力量。觀照法鼓 山的外部情勢、內部狀況,除了看到問題,更重要的是要覺 察外部的契機、內部的轉機,看到解決問題的關鍵因素。

1. 外部契機

就整個世界局勢而言,可以說是我們所處的大環境,包括軍政環境、經濟環境、社會環境、文化環境、自然環境等等。 ② 軍政環境面臨因種族、國家、宗教、政治等因素所引發的衝突、戰爭,經濟環境面臨金融海嘯、過度消費、生產安全、貧富差距等種種困境,社會環境面臨家庭結構改變、教育方式變化等種種情況,自然環境處於天災不斷、氣候變遷、自然資源銳減、環境破壞的危機。全世界的科學家、專家學者、世界領袖,乃至宗教家,無不盡全力為解決大環境的問題而努力。

就佛法的角度,面對世界局勢、種種現象,掌握的關鍵因素為「心」,故創辦人以「心靈環保」的推動來轉化因緣,如在《聖嚴法師心靈環保》一書的〈序〉中提到:

從一九八九年起,又在國內提倡建設人間淨土的理念,響應環境衛生、保育自然生態、珍惜自然資源的號召。同時呼籲發起「心靈環保」的運動。若想救世界,必須要從救人心做起,如果人的思想觀念不能淨化,要使得社會風氣淨化,是非常難的。心靈的淨化,便是理性與感性的調

② 同註**⑤**, 頁 102-103。

和,智慧與慈悲的配合,勇於放下自私的成見,勤於承擔 責任及義務,奉獻出自己,成就給大眾,關懷社會,包容 他人。唯有如此,人間淨土的實現,才不會僅是空洞的理 想。22

就臺灣而言,這幾年面臨著黨政衝突、食品安全、重大命案、社會運動、學生運動、自然災害等,造成人心浮動、社會不安。其中,齊柏林導演所拍攝的紀錄片《看見台灣》引發大眾對自然生態環保的重視及省思;連續發生食品標示不實、食用油油品成分、毒澱粉等食品安全事件,使大眾進一步思考生產問題;二〇一三年因抗議《服貿協定》發生太陽花學運事件,引發全國的關注。

當這些重大事件發生時,許多法師及居士們,總會憶起創辦人不斷地洞悉世界局勢、社會脈動,提出利益大眾、安定人心、易於實踐的方法,對安定社會的奉獻。如九二一大地震時呼籲「台灣加油!」社會動盪時呼籲「心安平安」,推動「說好話、做好事、轉好運」的大好年等等。不僅對臺灣具影響力,更不斷地透過國際會議影響世界領袖。

創辦人圓寂後,這樣的力量就消失了嗎?事實上,第二代包括弟子、法子們,仍接續著創辦人的足跡往前走。在禪修帶領上,幾位法子除了臺灣、北美、亞洲,更遠赴歐洲、墨西哥、中國等地,繼續弘傳漢傳禪法。在國際接軌上,美國法鼓山佛教協會(Dharma Drum Mountain Buddhist

❷ 釋聖嚴,《聖嚴法師心靈環保》,臺北:法鼓文化,2004年,頁3-4。

Association,簡稱 DDMBA)在弟子們的努力下,於二〇一四年七月正式取得「聯合國經濟及社會理事會」(United Nations Economic and Social Council,簡 稱 ECOSOC)的「特別諮詢地位」(Special Consultative status);將使法鼓山的理念持續在國際會議上交流。在學術及教育上,法鼓佛教學院與法鼓人文社會學院併校,於二〇一四年八月通過立校為法鼓文理學院,將於二〇一五年正式招生,成立以心靈環保為核心,由佛教學系為基礎,擴展生命教育學程、社區再造學程、社會企業與創新學程、環境與發展的博雅教育。理念推動上,法鼓山人文社會基金會持續推動心六倫,走向看守所、企業、偏鄉學校;聖嚴教育基金會持續推動一〇八自在語、舉辦聖嚴思想研討會,帶動佛學研究、跨領域研究。這些力量,將是向外部推動的契機!

2. 內部轉機

然創辦人圓寂後,團體是否還繼續累積動能,內修外 弘,在淨化人心、淨化社會、組織成長各方面著力?幾番省 思,內部的轉機可歸納以下四點:

(1) 整體方向:

法鼓山自一九八九年找到金山法鼓山,為了法鼓山世界佛教教育園區的工程建設經費,護法體系於焉誕生,為工程募款。園區於二○○五年落成後,接著是法鼓大學②的硬體建設,以及各分院之硬體工程,經費的壓力,使得整體推動教育與關懷的同時,募款的氛圍亦持續著。

❷ 二○一四年八月一日教育部核准設立法鼓文理學院。

隨著學校及各地分寺院工程建設逐一完成,整體方向將更著力於教育與關懷上。大學的第一期工程將於二〇一五年完成,因社會環境的變化,學校走向小而精緻的規模發展,建設可視需求再擴充。分寺院方面,農禪寺水月道場改建,於二〇一二年十二月二十九日落成;繼齋明寺古蹟修復、禪堂興建後,位於桃園市區的齋明別苑於二〇一三年三月八日落成啟用;臺中寶雲寺將於二〇一五年三月底落成,整體在臺灣各地的據點更臻完備。軟體上,法鼓山世界佛教教育園區大學院教育的完備,提供大普化教育、大關懷教育的基礎。各項弘化,除了禪修推廣,推動信眾教育的聖嚴書院,近年在各地舉辦課程,不斷地扎根;慈基會慈善關懷的經驗;分寺院及護法總會在各地深入教育關懷、淨化社會風氣的力量,將更加增強。

(2)組織架構

現行的組織架構為二〇〇五年所建構,十年來因緣多所變化,呈現部門間溝通協調不順暢,故重新檢討組織架構及層級會議之設計。從「華嚴六相」 總別、同異、成壞的角度,可看到現行組織架構呈現疊床架屋,增加溝通協調上的難度,亦造成人與人之間的誤解,影響個人、部門、及整體互動的氛圍。除了組織架構,整體的組織文化,更是亟需重新形塑的。

事實上,創辦人針對組織運作、分工合作、溝通協調的

開示頗多,可以從《工作好修行:聖嚴法師的 38 則職場智 慧》、《帶著禪心去上班》、《法鼓晨音》等書,「專職菩 薩精神講話」、「僧眾早齋開示」影音資料中重新整理、吸 收。這些豐富的資源,正是可以讓大眾一起於組織運作中練 習、體會之處。

(3) 法鼓山僧眾

創辦人於一九七八年開始剃度弟子,而成立僧團;早期的僧教育屬於師徒制,僧眾們藉由執事中學習,並隨緣安排師資上課。二〇〇一年法鼓山僧伽大學成立,出家弟子們開始接受學院制的僧教育。僧眾先接受僧教育,再進入僧團領執;資深法師與年輕法師、接受師徒制教育與學院教育法師、男眾與女眾法師,在經驗上、世代上、學習過程的種種差異,再加上有更多不同國籍的青年加入,形成僧眾之間的多元文化。

創辦人圓寂後,僧眾們有頓失依怙之感,力求執事奉獻與修行方法的著力與結合。所幸創辦人留下的教育資源非常地豐富,僧眾們透過每週的「聖嚴師父早齋開示」、《法鼓全集》、各種影音開示、禪七開示,繼續向創辦人學習。此外,僧大課程、法鼓佛教學院的課程資源,都是僧眾們可以學習的管道。再加上聖嚴書院教學、禪修指導、法會帶領、信眾關懷、執事等面向的學習,讓僧眾們有許多成長的機會。

最可貴的是,僧眾們清楚明白要團結,也非常地尊重執 事倫理、戒臘倫理,共同以僧團的制度,和合地運作。法師 們跟隨創辦人的經驗累積與分享,是帶動內部的轉機。

^{● 「}以六相總別同異成壞門。」《新華嚴經論》第5卷, CBETA, T36, No. 1739, p. 749, b28。

(4) 法鼓山俗眾

俗眾可分為專職、義工、及護法信眾們,有的俗眾跟隨 創辦人修學多年,在開山的過程中扮演很重要的角色,無論 在工程建設上、募款護持上、活動舉辦上、理念推動上,都 有賴居士們的規畫、協助,共同成就。

創辦人持續地推動理念,帶動社會風氣,讓資深信眾們,非常地懷念。創辦人圓寂後,資深信眾們感到團體少了向外的動力,甚至感到少了與體系的情感連結和奉獻的著力點。如何轉化整個體系的氛圍,以服務為目的,強化專職菩薩服務熱忱;帶動地區義工菩薩們的動力,能身心安定地支援各地、歡喜奉獻,是眾所期待的景象。

然創辦人給予信眾的教育亦是非常豐富的,資深信眾及 專職們,深記著這是個以僧團為核心的團體,護僧的心未曾 間斷。不僅盡心盡力地護持著僧團,更不斷地努力透過各種 管道,如網路、各種媒體,推廣法鼓山的理念。這些豐富的 資源,正也是內部的轉機。

彙整上述所陳述的是世界情勢及法鼓山現況,可整理於 表二。

初接都監執事時,先看到種種現象及問題點,一時之間 無法找到切入點,經常面臨不同的聲音,希望有所改善,實 則不知該如何進行。然逐漸地,看到體系內含豐富的寶藏與 能量,是可以結合大眾力量,轉化危機為契機與轉機。

表二:法鼓山內外情勢

	現 象	機會
世界情勢	眾生的苦: 1. 經濟危機、環境危機、氣候變 遷、家庭結構破壞。 2. 西方主流思潮,追求最大化。	不忍眾生苦: 世界宗教領袖,尋求宗教解決之 道。
法鼓山現況	問題: 1. 整體方向:需深化教育關懷。 2. 組織架構:需建構溝通協調之平台。 3. 僧眾:需強化修行著力點。 4. 俗眾:需提起專職服務熱忱、義工動力、資深信眾之恆長心。	法鼓山有寶: 1.1992 年推廣心靈環保,2000 年推展至世界。 2. 法鼓山的共識、使命、理念。 3. 創辦人留下的法寶。

三、開創「修行型」組織

身為組織的領眾者,每天面對各部門的情況、人與人之間的溝通協調,各種的境界、挑戰不斷地出現;如同禪期間的總護,時時觀照著禪堂的整體狀況,並做適當的處理。默照禪法正是一種很適合在日常生活中練習的功夫,如同創辦人在《聖嚴法師教默照禪》一書中對默照的詮釋:

默照是先照後默,但是為何不叫照默,而要叫默照呢?通常在任何狀況下,知道自己在做什麼,就叫做照。……因此,默的工夫是對於所照的心境要默,默那些所知、所覺、所想、所受的身心狀況,不再被它們影響下去,也就是默其所照,所以要倒過來,稱為默照而不是照默。每

⑤ 同註**⑩**,頁 23-24。

當六根「觸」六塵時,如眼所見、耳所聽,所引發的 覺「受」,進而帶動好惡的「愛」,再進一步形成揀擇的 「取」,便是順著十二因緣的生死流轉。若能默其所照,便 不易隨境所轉,也必能照得更深廣!如同《坐禪箴》所言:

不觸事而知,不對緣而照。不觸事而知,其知自微。不對緣而照,其照自妙。

本節探討筆者如何掌握默照禪法的核心,「捨」,不 斷地放下執著、觀照整體,並借重大眾的力量,為法鼓山規 畫出一個心靈環保的修行型組織藍圖。整個過程,是修行過 程,正也是行動研究的過程!

(一)組織專案推動

當觀察整體教團情況,筆者開始尋覓下手處,開始感受到組織架構的膠著。三月九日(週日)甲法師提到一三七三期《商業周刊》的一篇文章〈瘋狂!不用一滴蛋液做出炒蛋——他33歲靠一顆蛋打造「食物界Google」〉20,三月十日(週一)又接到甲法師的電子郵件,強調其中的觀點,帶來的啟發,很受用。個人細讀這篇文章,主角漢普頓克里克食品(Hampton Creek Foods),重新找尋蛋的元素,再從植物中提煉出來的方式,值得思惟。文中提到:

《華爾街日報》(The Wall Street Journal)形容:「這群人把食物當成軟體在研發,致力於從不同植物中找出正確的程式碼(code)。」

筆者與甲法師的互動,引導筆者反思,組織調整要回到 原本的精神,而不是依目前的情況修改或擴充。然什麼樣的 組織架構能真正地落實理念、推廣理念?當時並沒有答案。

1. 專案形成

- 二〇一四年四月一日,筆者邀請到法鼓山的總顧問,指 導組織架構及營運的問題,總顧問提醒大家,不要被過去的 因緣所限制,並總結幾個重點:
- (1)組織簡單化:思考目前組織需要的單位來架構,不受過去組織因緣的影響。(2)簡單的事先做:容易改善的事先進行,猶如一般經銷的連鎖店,可先處理店家的調整,店面光線充足、店家統一識別等等。(3)理念方向確認:將與各單位確認是朝向教育、關懷的方向。(4)適人適任:組織調整後,再思考人事的調整。

此次請益會議中,總顧問的建議,促使筆者開始朝組織 簡化、理念確認、適人適用,這幾個方向進行。教育,應該 是最重要及最核心的一環,卻也是最難的部分;因而思考組 織架構是較明確的著力點,可先從此處開始進行討論,帶動 其他議題的探討。

請教總顧問後,便於四月七日邀請幾位法師及菩薩, 討論組織架構之可行方案。其後兩個月當中,進行了無數次 的會議討論,筆者親自參與了二十五場的溝通會議及決策會

議,逐漸整理出調整方案。除此之外,會務小組更有無數次的規畫討論會議,以及與各單位的說明溝通會議,期許透過會議溝通,能使組織調整之事,呈現公開、透明、參與的方向進行,每次的會議與會者都提供豐富的建議,讓規畫團隊不斷地得到回應、反思、修正規畫,形成一個良性的循環,亦形成修行的氛圍。其中幾個關鍵會議,與會者的回應,帶給筆者省思及啟發,讓筆者不斷地突破現況。

這段期間的關鍵決策及溝通會議中,其中數場會議對於 組織架構簡化具突破性影響:

(1) 三大體系提出

四月九日與乙法師針對四月七日討論出的組織架構討論,乙法師提出許多的看法,並提出發展、運作、支援三大體系的構想。經過問題討論,筆者認同三大體系的構想,為組織架構簡化跨出了第一步。

(2) 法鼓山未來提出

五月五日向三位資深悅眾請益,菩薩們除了提供組織架 構建議,更提到需要進一步討論法鼓山的未來。討論中可以 感受到資深信眾們,對法鼓山的期許。

(3)修行型組織提出

經過多場的會議討論,及分別與不同的法師互動,五月七日早上出現「修行型組織」之念頭,並計畫成立「心靈環保組織專案」,專案目標為建立一個「修行型組織」,落實「心靈環保組織學」。

(4) 組織簡化建議

五月七日下午,與資深悅眾丙顧問討論組織架構時,談 到僧俗問題,建議思考哪些部門適合僧團,哪些適合俗眾, 以調整僧團的部分為優先考慮。會議後,不斷地思考,發現 筆者過於理想化,故於五月八日再以電子郵件向丙顧問請教 後,整合之前討論之簡化內容,再加上丙顧問的建議,具體 提出一個最簡化的組織架構。同時,也思考到一步到位的困 難,應分階段進行,於是規畫朝三階段調整的方式進行。

(5)教育體系產出

五月十日邀請法鼓山上的法師,進行「心靈環保組織專案」第一場專案成立籌備會議。會議中,多位法師及顧問對所準備的資料,認為不夠完整,建議頗多。熟悉組織調整過程的顧問,也提供很多建議,尤其是組織調整對資訊系統的影響,需要同步思考。另外,與會者對人才培育單位所應放置的體系,有不同的看法。部分法師認為可放在支援體系,另一部分的法師認為應該放在發展體系,形成膠著狀態。

會議後,與會務小組檢討,反省簡報準備不夠完整,決 定利用假日補足。另外,決定專案增加資訊整合組,同步思 考資訊系統、財會系統、電子公文系統的調整問題。

關於人才培育部門的放置位置,筆者於五月十一日出 現靈感,思考到可以獨立成為一個教育體系,凸顯組織的教 育特色。至此,專案的架構以及法鼓山教團的組織架構體 系,於是產生。其後,五月十二日的正式籌備會議,正式確 認各組的小組長,此案於五月十三日的宗務綱領執事會議通 過;並於六月九日僧團代表會議中說明及交流討論,以產生

[●] 當天寫的是「心靈環保管理學」,然筆者認為,組織比管理更適合,故 於本文中做了修改。

共識。

2. 專案運作

專案是經過反思的過程,而逐漸形成;透過多次會議, 參與者的疑問,逐步建構專案運作的特色,包括:落實心靈 環保、建立溝通平台、形成多元團隊。

(1) 落實心靈環保

心靈環保組織專案之目的,便是以專案的方式,帶動大眾討論現存的問題,並尋求解決之道,調整現存偏差的狀況:①由募款為導向的氛圍,轉為深化教育及關懷之導向。 ②將組織架構的障礙,轉為組織架構簡化及組織文化形塑。 ③由僧俗四眾的困頓中,轉為深化僧俗四眾人才培育。期許法鼓山的每一份子,人人都能落實教育與關懷,人人都能落實心靈環保。如創辦人所言:

要提昇人的品質,則應先從自己開始,進而再幫助他人提昇他人的品質,以種種恰到好處的方式來幫助人,使得共同生活在我們環境裡的每一個人,都能夠得到利益。

同樣地,建設人間淨土,也要從每一個人建起。在平凡和歷練中奮力向上,一邊建立自己,同時進而推廣到周遭環境裡的他人,讓他們都能夠得到佛法的滋潤,接受佛法的因果觀念,體會佛法對人間很有用,也來認同佛教,修學佛法。

所以專案團隊,不僅是為推動整體組織心靈環保的落 實,更是期許在專案規畫過程,便是心靈環保的落實。

(2) 形成多元團隊

專案形成後,專案分工形成了多元的團隊,包括性別、 僧俗、戒臘、年齡、執事經驗、性格特質等多元,彼此分工 合作、互補優缺點、相互學習及啟發,使每位成員的優點能 發揮到極致,而缺點降至最低;讓團隊對團體的奉獻能量提 昇。專案中,各小組邀請戒長法師擔任顧問,針對相關議題 做經驗的傳承與指導;戒淺法師透過參與專案為大眾服務的 過程,進行多元化的學習。

專案組織共分為會務小組及四組,會務小組統籌各項會議的召集、資料準備、紀錄、資料整理等等。四組的分工目標範圍為:①法鼓山未來組:包括法鼓山短期(2015年)、中(2016-2018年)、長期(2019-2025年)規畫,並探討法鼓山能為社會做什麼。②組織架構組:設計出最簡化的組織架構,並分階段調整。③人才培育組:包括僧眾、專職、義工(含居士師資)之養成。其中,僧眾是從進入僧團直至往生,整體的僧涯管教養衛之規畫。④資訊整合組:組織架構調整後,對各種系統之影響亦頗大,包括資訊系統、財會系統、公文系統之整合。

會務小組及小組長可說是專案組織最重要的核心。會 務小組成員,是由跨單位的三位法師及一位居士所組成。三 位法師的輩分不同,代表經驗不同,性向、專長、特質也不 同;居士具專業背景,對僧團情況也熟悉,然為居士,處理 僧眾方面問題,稍有限制。這樣的多元組合,初期默契尚未

[■] 釋聖嚴,《法鼓山的方向》,《法鼓全集》8-6,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年,百83-84。

建立,還無法呈現團隊合作的力量。然經過一次一次的會議,筆者與團隊由會議情況反思現況,不斷地深入討論改善之道,小組也開始尋找合作的模式,使每位成員的優點可以發揮。

各小組邀請戒長法師擔任顧問,針對相關議題做經驗的 傳承與指導;戒淺法師透過參與專案為大眾服務的過程,進 行多元化的學習。專案小組長的產生,亦是因緣法。有的小 組原有期望人選,但當事人沒有意願、或無法配合會議時間 與會;有的小組期待戒長法師擔任,但會議討論時,建議讓 年輕法師擔任;最後形成均由年輕法師擔任。此現象,意外 地帶來幾種臆測:①小組長是否會成為體系的負責人?②戒 長法師都要被換掉?③專案不邀請戒長法師參與?④經驗是 否會斷層?這樣的想法,似乎在僧團中流傳著,讓筆者頗為 訝異。原來這次的做法,與過去的經驗不同,造成大家嚴重 地不適應。大家總認為筆者心中有所規畫,實則只是順著因 緣往前走。

開始時,筆者被負面的力量所影響,感受到強大的壓力,感受到阻力。透過善知識的協助,逐漸練習不被負面的力量左右,不斷地觀照整體的狀況,讓正向的力量來影響個別的情況。漸漸地覺察,種種的臆測來自於筆者的表達不清;每次會議當中,筆者說話用語的不精準,隨順因緣所說的言語,帶給與會者不同的解讀,而形成誤解或揣測。加上因緣法的專案形成方式,確實讓大多數的人無法理解與預測。

(3) 建構溝涌平台

溝通,是專案也是組織運作的關鍵。創辦人給弟子的「行事六要領」

,是建立團隊中和諧關係的要領,其中包括了「主動溝通」。溝通的方式有多種,如會議、談話等都是,創辦人亦在為弟子早齋開示時說:

大眾事經過大眾的討論,就會有共識,也比較容易推動。因此開會是彼此溝通、取得共識的暢通管道和最佳方法……。佛陀也曾說:佛在僧中,佛不領眾。這表示僧是一個共同生活的修行群體,能互相照顧、支援,彼此督導、勉勵,表現出團隊的精神。因此,在僧團生活中,必須經常用開會來解決大家共同的問題。30

筆者與會務小組的溝通會議,除了小組會議、專案會議 及決策會議,還包括針對各單位的說明會等等。儘管採取了 主動溝通的方式,對上、對平行、對下、對大眾,不斷地主 動溝通、說明;然而有些人認同、支持,有些人反對、甚至 批評,整體仍產生助力及阻力之力量。

阻力的形成,有幾種可能性:無法解讀到專案對整體的 利益、自己的意見感覺未被採納、或未被邀請參與討論、對 專案成員的表達方式存疑等等。無論是何種原因,均可歸納

^{● 「}行事六要領」包括:堅守原則、充分授權、尊重他人、關懷對方、主動溝通、隨時檢討。參見:釋聖嚴,《帶著禪心去上班:聖嚴法師的禪式工作學》,臺北:法鼓文化,2010年,頁42。

[●] 釋聖嚴,《法鼓晨音》,臺北:法鼓文化,2000年,頁100。

為「溝通不良」。團隊必須不斷地檢討,專案團隊的善意要如何表達才能被解讀到?是否充分了解大眾的需求?是否讀到每位表達意見者的心聲?是否同理到每個人的處境?

化解阻力的過程,筆者與專案團隊,必須練習尊重他 人、關懷對方、隨時檢討,並不斷地調整溝通的方式:傾聽 大眾的聲音、承認自己的過失、充分表達善意。筆者與團 隊,確實在過程中,不斷地在修正身儀、口儀、心儀,同時 朝向禮儀環保、職場倫理的落實。

(二)心靈環保組織

心靈環保組織專案的運作,目的在於建構出一個以心 靈環保為核心的修行型組織,專案團隊的組成與運作,扣著 修行的原則:不斷地反省、修正、改善;朝著符合禪宗的核 心:化繁為簡、實用活用的方向規畫組織。本節將論述透過 專案團隊及各層級會議,所整合出修行型組織的組織定位及 組織體系。

1. 組織定位

彼得·聖吉著作的《第五項修練》一書中,提出「學習型組織」 動,然此概念仍不足以表達筆者對法鼓山的認識與創辦人的期許。幾番的會議與不同法師的互動,筆者感受到「修行型」更能真實地表達這個組織的核心價值與定位。故筆者定位法鼓山組織為「修行型組織」,所有組織內的法

師及菩薩們均在修行(實踐教育及關懷),並涵蓋了幾個 特點:

(1) 三學研修

創辦人於一九七九年於農禪寺創建三學研修院,當年寫下院訓時,便能充分看到創辦人建立團體的宗旨:「本院以養成戒定慧三學並重之人才為宗旨。」❷如今組織已經擴大,但僧團仍於每天早課結束前背誦院訓,也代表著整體的宗旨,仍是以培養三學並重的人才。

創辦人草擬之〈漢傳佛教系統傳承表〉中,重視《六祖壇經》的三學特色:「心地無非自性戒,心地無癡自性慧,心地無亂自性定。」❸而更以「心靈環保」,來詮釋與表達三學的意涵,包含以四種環保、心六倫,表達了戒的精神;以漢傳禪修,表達定的精神;而以心五四來表達慧的境界。

(2) 大悲心起3

二〇〇五年法鼓山落成開山大典的主題為「大悲心 起」,說明整體組織的動力,來自於利他;為了幫助眾生,

聖嚴法師在《法鼓山故事》頁 18-19 中指出:「大悲心起」在諸觀音經、《大悲心陀羅尼》等,都說觀音以大悲心平等救濟一切眾生,故稱為「施無畏者」。(聖嚴法師口述,胡麗桂整理,臺北:法鼓文化,2007年)

[●] 彼得·聖吉著,郭進隆譯,《第五項修練──學習型組織的藝術與實務》,臺北:天下文化,1994年。

^{● 「}三學研修院院訓」,1979。

⑤ 「心地無非自性戒,心地無癡自性慧,心地無亂自性定。」(《六祖大師法寶壇經》第1卷,CBETA,T48,no. 2008, p. 358, c12-13)

對 大悲心之出處:「如來室者,一切眾生中大慈悲心是。」(《妙法蓮華經》第4卷,〈10法師品〉,CBETA, T09, no. 262, p. 31, c25-26); 「若佛子。常起大悲心。」(《梵網經》第2卷,CBETA, T24, no. 1484, p. 1009, a25)

我們必須精進修行,以得到更深的體驗,才能將法分享給眾生。故法鼓山是以心靈環保為核心,利他、菩提心為上首,僧俗四眾一起修行戒定慧,落實關懷、執事、領眾的組織。

(3) 同心同願

創辦人於一九九八年法鼓山會員大會提出,並於一九九 九年對勸募會員的新春開示:

所謂「一師一門,同心同願」的意義,就是說諸位菩薩既然是法鼓山的勸募或護持會員,就要時時刻刻以法鼓山的理念、師父的化身來指路。……諸位菩薩一定要隨時提醒自己,你們是法鼓山的一員,聖嚴師父是你們的老師,跟隨聖嚴師父學習佛法,平時多看師父的書、多看師父的電視弘法節目、聽師父的錄音帶或看錄影帶,這樣才能「同心同願」,和聖嚴師父的理念結合在一起。❸

此時,僧俗四眾同心同願,承先啟後共同推動法鼓山的 理念,達成「提倡全面教育,落實整體關懷」之方向。

(4)人人都是領眾者

儘管外界、信眾們均期待法鼓山能培養出一個具有魅力 的領眾者。然就筆者觀點,這是一個團隊運作的時代,應該 以團隊領導來帶動整個團體,甚至每個人都能發揮特長,帶 動團體。故團體中的每一個人,都能成為推動理念的鼓手, 都是領眾者。

(5) 安全機制建立

即預防勝於治療。無論是人的身心健康、組織的發展、 各項事務的運作,預防勝於治療是不變的原則。組織應該費 更多的心力在於防弊,便能減少治療、補過所費的時間了。 故所有人、事、物之照顧與運作,均需要思考預防勝於治療、防弊勝於補過。

2. 組織體系

在上述組織定位下,組織體系朝向「化繁為簡」的方向 規畫,亦思考各體系需能發揮「實用活用」之功能。此外, 組織內溝通協調、經驗傳承之順暢,形塑出心靈環保的組織 文化,亦是專案團隊所努力的方向。

(1)建構四大體系

專案所建構的組織體系概念,可以圖二表示之,大圓中 有三個有交集的圓。大圓代表教育體系,而三個交集圓,則 代表發展、運作、支援三大體系。所有在組織的僧俗四眾, 均在修行戒定慧三學,均在接受教育及關懷,也都是教育及 關懷的推手。無論我們在哪個體系領執,都在修行,也都在 轉法輪,弘揚漢傳禪法及心靈環保。



圖二:四大體系示意圖

教育體系是以心靈環保為核心,培養僧俗四眾人才的體 系。人才養成包括禪修、法會、佛學、關懷、領眾、執事等 各種面向。而中華佛學研究所、法鼓文理學院等教育學術研 究單位,更是推動整體教育發展的基石。

發展體系具有研發及推廣各類及各年齡層課程的功能,包括禪修、法會、佛學、關懷之類別,以及樂齡、青年、兒少之年齡層。再加上幾個基金會的發展:慈善基金會、聖嚴教育基金會、人文社會基金會等,使法鼓山之研發更具前瞻性、開創性。

運作體系指全球各地據點,包括全球寺院及全球護法。 寺院包括臺灣各地道場、亞洲的香港、馬來西亞道場,及北 美地區的道場。全球護法體系則包括臺灣地區的辦事處、共 修處,以及遍及亞洲、澳洲、北美、歐洲之護法分會、聯絡 處,以及各類會團。

支援體系擔負著整個體系的行政支援服務,包括了公關、文宣、活動、資訊、總務、財會、資產、法律事務、建設工程、人力資源等單位。這是個為整體統籌服務的體系,整合各體系的行政運作,協助各體系的發展。

整個組織,透過教育體系培養人才至其他體系。發展體系需要洞悉社會脈動、各地區需求,研發符合法鼓山理念及大眾需要的修行課程;發展體系所開展出的課程,推廣至運作體系,由全球各據點包括分寺院及護法據點共同推廣。支援體系,則以服務的精神與態度,協助各體系所面臨的種種行政運作,使整體的分工合作順暢。

(2) 形塑組織文化

組織架構之下,各體系、各部門的和合團隊及跨部門、跨體系的溝通協調,是形塑心靈環保組織文化的關鍵;亦即是朝向培育快樂、奉獻、利他四眾人才之目標。專案運作期間,筆者在「形成多元團隊」、「建構溝通平台」的經驗中,體會到「溝通」是和合團隊亟待突破的重點。過往,溝通所產生的誤解很多,造成人與人之間、部門與部門之間的隔閡,使得團體分工之後,合作不足,無法凝聚組織力量,亦容易造成負向的組織氛圍。

創辦人除了提出「行事六要領」,以建立團隊中和諧的關係; ● 更以佛教之「六和敬」,做為團隊的合作法門。 ● 其中,口和無諍、意和同悅、見和同解,掌握了溝通協調的核心原則。口和無諍,是語言的呈現,要經常使用敬語、愛語、勉勵語或同情語;語言的適當,可使雙方相互尊敬。意和同悅,是一種最愉快的溝通觀念;經常保持心情的愉快,以愉快、真誠的心情,來欣賞、接納對方,彼此間便能營造出愉快的氣氛。見和同解,是一種誠意、開放、接受他人觀點的態度,且要採取主動,願意與人和。 ● 創辦人對於溝通,做了清楚的詮釋:

³ 同註2 。

^{動 六和敬:身和同住、□和無諍、意和同悅、見和同解、利和同均、戒和同修。}

[■] 釋聖嚴,《工作好修行:聖嚴法師的38則職場智慧》,臺北:法鼓文化,2008年,頁135。

有了誠意以後,還必須清楚表達自己的立場,同時也要了解對方的立場,如此就可以找到共同點;有了共同點,才能夠攜手合作;既然可以攜手合作,就一定可以互蒙其利。

到

筆者於密集的會議及個人的互動之中,覺察到溝通不良,肇因於彼此的對立。若能覺照自己不與任何人、任何事、任何物對立時,心必定是安定的;自然能適當地傳達出自己的善意,亦能安定的接受到他人的善意,溝通的品質便有所改善。溝通時,用心傾聽,當能夠聽聞到超越二元的訊息,更能看清整體狀況,表達及接受善意,必能形塑出「以慈悲對待人、以智慧處理事」的心靈環保組織文化。

整個專案的形成、組織架構藍圖的建構,是經由一次一次的討論、交流,集眾人的智慧而逐漸形成的。筆者只是扮演著一個集大成者,不斷地吸收大眾的意見,不斷地判斷取捨,不斷地修正而成。過程中的壓力、難度,其實很高,此又是引導筆者走向觀音法門的修行之路。

四、實踐「菩薩道」精神

擔任都監後,先參「都監是誰?」而體會到「都監即總護」;接著用默照禪法,觀照整體,在整體大眾的協助之下,開展出「修行型組織」的心靈環保組織概念。運作的過程中,更發現自己的慈悲心不足,在繼程法師的指導之下,

開始修行觀音法門。

法師指出,過往筆者以話頭與《金剛經》為主要修行法門,是「自力」、「智慧」的法門;由於領眾的執事,是需要「他力」、「慈悲」的,所以要用觀音法門來轉化智慧為慈悲。尤其是《普門品》,可以引導筆者,遇到不同的人,以他人的方式來引導、接引,才能真正領眾。

對領眾者言,觀音法門確實是很重要的法門,如何透過 修行觀音法門,開展出自利利他的智慧及慈悲?如何在面對 阻力與助力的過程中,感受處處是觀音菩薩?是本節所分析 的重點。

(一)修行觀音法門

創辦人將法鼓山世界佛教教育園區定名為「觀音道場」,有三尊觀音菩薩像,分別是開山觀音、來迎觀音、及祈願觀音;落成時提出「大悲心起」,整個組織的動力,來自於利他的菩提心;如創辦人於一九九〇年底在美國寫下的〈菩薩行〉:

如何成佛道,菩提心為先。何謂菩提心?利他為第一。 為利眾生故,不畏諸苦難。若眾生離苦,自苦即安樂。 發心學佛者,即名為菩薩。菩薩最勝行,悲智度眾生。

[●] 聖嚴法師於一九九○年十二月十二日在美國東初禪寺寫下〈菩薩行〉, 並傳給在臺灣的弟子們。

可以明白,創辦人的願力是透過佛法、禪法的教育與關懷,幫助眾生離苦得樂;而要將佛法及禪法弘揚至世界,以 利益更多的眾生,菩薩道是勢在必行的道路。又如創辦人於 《法鼓山的故事》中所述:

我們祈求觀音救助是絕對有用的;同時,也當於日常生活中,修行觀音法門的「入流亡所」、「大悲心起」,並且發願有一天也能「觀世自在」。這是法鼓山名為「觀音道場」的殊勝之處。大家最容易做的,便是護持法鼓山推動佛教的各項教育事業,也等於在做淨化社會人心的工作,便是大悲心的學習與實踐。
①

筆者從持「南無觀世音菩薩」聖號、誦《普門品》為眾生祈福,亦從創辦人的兩本書《聖嚴法師教觀音法門》、《觀音妙智:觀世音菩薩耳根圓通法門講要》學習觀音法門的觀念與方法。觀音法門在方法上包括兩層面向:一是自利的「耳根圓通法門」,二是利他的「聞聲救苦」精神,是融合智慧與慈悲的法門。❷

1. 耳根圓通法門

依據《楞嚴經》第六卷,觀世音菩薩於觀音佛座下聽 聞「耳根圓通法門」,而修行此方法。從聽聞外在的聲音, 而進一步收攝心意,耳根如吸音板般聽聞聲音,進入「入流 亡所」之層次,再反聞聞自性,包括聲音的自性、萬法的自 性。萬法的自性即是空性,即聞見空性、了悟空性、實證空 性,此與諸佛的智慧圓滿相應,而能證入諸法實相。此時不 僅是耳根圓通,更是六根圓通、六根互用的境界。❸

創辦人教授初入門者的初步修法,稱為「聞聲音法」, 共分四個步驟:

(1)專念普聽一切聲音,不選擇對象,不分別對象,由大至小,由近至遠,不以耳根去聽,乃讓聲自來。 (2)知道自己在聽聲音,也有聲音在被自己所聽,此時 只有聲音和自己的和應,沒任何雜念現前。(3)僅有聲音而忘失了自己,自己已融入無分別無界限的聲音之中。 (4)聲音與自己雙亡雙照,雙亡則無內外自他,雙照則仍歷歷分明,故與世間的四禪八定的僅存獨頭意識的境界不同,也與小乘的滅受想定有異。

在領眾的過程中,常常聽到許多的聲音,如讚歎、支持、批評、抱怨、是非、對錯等等,如何能「入流亡所」? 當聲音流進入耳根,也是根塵相觸的剎那,要能不隨境轉, 不產生分別、不落入揀擇,才能超越能所二元,從各種聲音

[●] 聖嚴法師口述,胡麗桂整理,《法鼓山故事》,臺北:法鼓文化,2007 年,百19。

[●] 參考《聖嚴法師教觀音法門》書中〈觀音法門的真實含意〉一節。(臺北:法鼓文化,2003年,頁23-24)

[●] 参考聖嚴法師《觀音妙智:觀世音菩薩耳根圓通法門講要》一書中, 楊惠南教授的導讀〈反聞聞自性──回到生命活水的源頭〉一文。(臺 北:法鼓文化,2010年,頁5-8)

[●] 釋聖嚴,《佛教入門》,臺北:法鼓文化,1979年,頁239。

中,用心體會聲音、反觀萬法的自性。當實際面對時,確實是需要不斷地鍛鍊,才能一點一滴地破我執而開發出智慧。

觀音法門的反聞聞自性,正也是參禪、照顧話頭,如虚 雲老和尚在《參禪要旨》中強調:

或問:「觀音菩薩的反聞聞自性,怎見得是參禪?」 我方才說照顧話頭就是時時刻刻單單的的,一念迴光反照 這「不生,不滅」。(話頭)迴,即是反,「不生,不 滅」,即是自性。「聞」和「照」,雖順流時循聲逐色, 聽不越於聲,見不超於色,分別顯然;但逆流時,反觀自 性,不去循聲逐色,則原是一精明,「聞」和「照」沒有 兩樣。

虚雲老和尚在上海玉佛寺的禪七中解釋「照顧話頭」四字,照者是反照,顧者是顧盼,即自反照自性;是將我們一向向外求的心,回轉來反照,細微地反照、審查,也就是反聞自性。❸

2. 聞聲救苦精神

依據《法華經·普門品》,觀音菩薩普門示現,大開慈 悲之門,開展「聞聲救苦」之精神。當觀音菩薩聽聞一切有 情眾生的種種聲音,包括苦、樂、憂、悲、喜等聲音,便能 於同一時間、剎那聽聞,而普遍施以救拔。觀音菩薩以其獨 特的「心聞」,清楚體會眾生的苦,並化現千百億化身,達 成出千處祈求、千處應的大門。

擔任領眾的執事,經常要聆聽法師們、菩薩們的聲音, 很希望能扮演觀音菩薩聞聲救苦的角色。也常常省思,什麼 才是真正對他人有利益的?逐漸地覺察到,若要能真正地幫 助他人,內心必須是安定的、不與境起分別、對立,才能做 到「以智慧處理事,以慈悲對待人」。當觀照到事件的許多 面向,能默住內心的起心動念,以整體觀處理,這個過程, 正也是默照禪法、利他功夫!

創辦人在《聖嚴法師教默照禪》一書中指出,修習默照禪必須遵守的基本態度有三:發大悲心,放捨諸相,休息萬事。❸其中,發大悲心,正是觀音菩薩的利他精神:

大悲心就是菩提心,也是能夠讓我們徹悟成佛的心。如果要徹悟,首先要發大悲心,然後才能夠頓悟成佛,因此,大悲心就是無上菩提心。既然發大悲心,那麼對任何人、任何眾生,都不能有對立、仇恨、傷害、疑懼以及嫉妒的心,代之以包容、憐愍、體恤的平等愛護、普遍救援,那就是大悲心了。

⑤ 虚雲老和尚〈參禪法要〉,收錄於《禪門修證指要》,頁239。原文為「反聞三自性」,參考其他版本,本文採用「反聞聞自性」。

⑥ 虚雲老和尚〈上海玉佛寺禪七開示〉,一九五三年二月二十二日開示。網址: http://book.bfnn.org/books/0427.htm。

^{毎 同註♥, 頁 24。}

❸ 同註⑩,頁29。

當修行觀音法門時,同時向內修行自利的耳根圓通法 門,開發智慧心;亦向外示現利他的尋聲救苦精神,開展慈 悲心。創辦人總結觀音法門如下:

由是「觀音法門」依據兩部經卷,囊括了兩重法要—— 一是自我修行的法門,另一是悲濟眾生的法門;前者是自 利,後者是利他。

自利,即修持一己的耳根圓通,圓滿覺慧;利他,即普 門示現,救苦救難,廣修悲濟。**⑤**

二〇一五年法鼓山的年度主題——光明遠大:智慧轉境,自心光明;慈悲利他,希望遠大;正充分展現觀音法門的精隨。

(二) 處處觀音菩薩

從接任都監至開始採取行動方案,一路走來所遇到的境界,確實是出家以來最豐富的過程。每次遇到困境,總有善知識出現,或被動的受到善知識提點,或主動向善知識求助,一關關地走過,可謂「關關難過關關過」。如《小止觀》指出善知識有三種:教授善知識、同行善知識,及外護善知識。 ④ 在困頓的過程,確實遇到三種善知識的開導,這些善知識,正如同觀音菩薩聞聲救苦般的協助,感到非常地

可貴及感恩。而善知識的呈現方式不同,有現金剛怒目相、 有現慈眉善目相,是助力或阻力,端看自己如何面對與運 用。此處分析筆者在教授善知識及同行善知識的協助之下, 提供助力及轉化阻力成為助力的過程。

1. 教授善知識

教授善知識以不同的角色出現,包括主七、小參、專 家顧問等,採用不同的手法,對筆者及團體產生強大的正向 助力。

(1) 主七、小參

在遇到困難時,尤其是嘗試幫助他人時,常常需要尋求助援,彷彿是禪期時,總護需要主七及小參法師的指導。扮演這樣角色的,首推方丈和尚,總是慈悲地包容、支持、愛護筆者,成為專案進行的助力。此外,繼程法師、戒長法師們的指導,均是很大的助力。一次一次不同的案例發生,筆者總是用心感受可以尋找的善知識,以及與當事者有緣的人。

跟著教授善知識學習的過程,學習到修行過程的兩大原則:一是修行要在眾中,二是要廣結善緣。每每遇到身心不調之人,無論修行的年資多久、修行工夫多深厚,發現每位善知識都同樣引導當事人,回到眾中。體會到眾中是安全的,且是有力量的,是最容易讓當事人慢慢修復的場域。此外,在協助找助緣時,很深刻地感受到,廣結善緣的重要。有的人很容易找到助緣,有的人是很困難找到的,這些現象,幫助筆者找到修行的基本原則,也深自警惕。

(2)專家顧問

這段期間,幾位熟識的護法居士,在筆者面對困難時,

³ 同註**4**, 頁 24。

經常給予鼓勵、支持、經驗分享、提醒,對筆者是很大的助力。其中包括心理諮商師、兒童心智科醫生、企業管理顧問、資深悅眾菩薩等等。他們的特質不同、專長不同,但護持僧團及法師的心願相同。專家顧問們,總是身懷絕技,遇到難題,能使出渾身解術,護持著僧團。

善知識們具備兩種特質:一是有求必應。大多數的專家顧問都是有求必應者,筆者總是難以想像,他們本身在事業上非常地忙碌,家庭中又有長輩、平輩、晚輩們需要照顧,他們怎能分身有術,做到忙人時間最多?筆者有時是透過電子郵件、有時透過電話請求支援,很感動這些菩薩們,總是願意耐心的奉陪到底,協助解決困境。

二是善巧方便。有的顧問感受到僧團或部分法師的狀況,會默默地、不著痕跡地,想出一些善巧方便,來提醒法師、協助法師,突破自身的限制或缺點。看到他們護法的用心,除了感恩,還是感恩!有趣的是,這些專家顧問,有的原本並非佛教徒,甚至是異教徒。然透過為僧團法師上課、參與各項活動規畫,一步步地吸收法義,走上學佛修行之路。

此外,就筆者的角度看來,他們雖以不同的身分出現,但風格如同禪門五家一般。創辦人所翻譯的《中國佛教史概說》中言:「依天目高峯(1238-1295)對於諸家禪風的評語:為仰之謹嚴、臨濟之痛快、雲門之高古、曹洞之細密、法眼之詳明。」

②

為仰宗雖然謹嚴,然師徒間的父慈子孝,充分表現在為 山靈佑禪師與弟子仰山慧寂禪師之間;許多教授善知識對於 創辦人的弟子們,亦是如子女般的照顧,是很溫馨感人的。 臨濟風格的教授善知識也是不少,對僧團頗有恨鐵不成鋼的 感受,使盡全身力量,棒喝,期許大家能頓悟,改頭換面。 曹洞風格的善知識,展現的整體觀、表達方式充滿意境,讓 人有不同於臨濟風格的感受。雲門禪師的名言「日日是好 日」,讓雲門風格的善知識,總是正向地鼓勵僧團。法眼宗 的詳明,表現在思想與著作上,這類型的善知識,亦給予僧 團許多的教導與影響。

2. 同行善知識

每位與筆者共事及共住的法師與菩薩,都可以稱為同行善知識,範圍包括執事上互動的法師及專職、同寮房的寮友、共同生活的法師、甚至學僧們。每天的互動,都有正向及負向力量交錯發生,筆者在此過程中,體會阻力與助力的微妙關係。同行善知識們的類別,可分為以下三種:

(1) 真誠護念者

總能感受到許多法師們及菩薩們的真誠護念,無論發生 什麼事,總是盡心盡力地協助、關懷,與陪伴。如幾位長期 合作過的執事法師,總耐心地聽筆者訴說所遇到的困境:與 人磨合的煩惱、面對逼拶的害怕、處理事情的困難等等,隨 著這些陪伴而逐漸走出。幾位協助面對逼拶的善知識們,總 是願意陪伴筆者,體會被審的滋味。雖然逼拶是增強自己修 行功力的重要因素,但期間若非同行善知識的護念,也難走 出困境。在執事、專案上,同事間在各方面的協助,更是罄

[●] 參見:《中國佛教史概說》第十一章第五節「禪宗的五派分張」。(釋 聖嚴譯,臺北:臺灣商務印書館,1972年)

竹難書了。

(2) 盤根錯節者

這類的法師及菩薩,其實並不多。他們本意是非常有心協助筆者,但因過去的經驗、對都監角色的看法,總希望 筆者能依照他們所期待的方式領眾。然而筆者畢竟有自己的 習性與個性,有自己的經驗與判斷,無法依照他人的想法進 行,彼此間因而產生許多的矛盾衝突。原本以為這是助力轉 為阻力的情況,然因這樣的衝擊,又是筆者自省的動力,或 因接受到對方的善意,又形成筆者的助力了。

還有的同行善知識,表面讚歎、支持,內心裡其實是錯綜複雜的,不知道未來會發生什麼事?不知道自己的位置是否受影響?隨著個人的特質而有些行動來面對。表面是助力,背後又是阻力的暗流;筆者慢慢地體會每個人心中的難處,反省著自己的行為造成他人的影響,或無法適當地表達出自己的善意,也是不慈悲;這些反省轉化的力量,終於也化為助力。

(3) 默默護持者

也許沒有辦法在執事上、煩惱上分憂解勞,但這些法師 及菩薩們,總是默默地護念著筆者。他們會觀照著筆者的生 活步調、身體狀況,適時的為筆者打便當、留意身體所需, 點點滴滴,銘記於心。僧大學僧們在筆者剛接任都監時,加 油打氣的畫作,始終掛在辦公室,一直是支持筆者的力量。 這一年所教的學僧,也不斷地關懷著筆者,學僧們的真誠與 單純,是筆者向前的動力!

無論是哪類善知識,筆者可以感受到《普門品》所說,

觀世音菩薩以不同的身分示現,來協助、護持僧團,深深感 受到處處是觀音菩薩!

五、結論

二〇一三年三月五日僧團召開僧團代表會議,確定擔任僧團都監。對筆者而言,是僧命中的大事,代表著必須脫離單純的山林生活,走上菩薩道。

從擔任都監開始,至二〇一四年六月九日法鼓山僧團代表會議說明心靈環保組織專案截止,筆者內心的轉換,組織體系的轉變,值得做為研究範圍。僧團代表會議後,筆者於六月十一日發了一封電子郵件給所有與會者,一方面分享會議討論結果,也表達這段期間的心情:

會議尾聲,個人想起去年三月五日(週二)僧代會議的情境,那是個讓大家心情沉重的一次會議,個人從那天起接下了都監的執事,當時內心是抗拒的、不知所措的。事隔一年半,看到僧團代表們可以這般熱烈地討論僧團的問題,將內心的想法,真誠地表達出來,心中充滿了感恩!

筆者以主事者及研究者之角度,分析這段期間的過程。 筆者運用了三種漢傳禪觀,於組織領眾中:1.臨濟宗話頭禪、2.曹洞宗默照禪、3.觀音法門。首先,透過話頭禪法疑情的力量,正視組織的問題,並看到組織調整的下手處。其次,運用默照禪法的整體觀,建構出心靈環保組織的藍圖。最後,以觀音法門實踐慈悲的關懷,成就此一專案的成立。 論文分析內容包含兩大部分:一是組織藍圖建構的過程,二是阻力與助力面對的過程。關於前者,筆者朝向幾個面向進行:一是組織架構簡化:不斷地放下原有的框架、放下自我中心的執著,逐步建構出最簡化的修行型組織藍圖。二是僧俗四眾關懷:不斷地放鬆身心、觀照大眾的身心情況,隨順因緣作階段性的組織調整。回首這樣的做法,正是創辦人在〈漢傳佛教傳承發展系統表〉,所整理出禪宗的原則:化繁為簡、實用活用,以達到:破執著——智慧,發大用——慈悲之目標。此正是漢傳禪佛教運用在組織建構的體現,更是落實與推動心靈環保的大用。更是創辦人開示:「以慈悲關懷人,以智慧處理事」的實踐。

至於阻力與助力的面對,是個很感人的過程,每每遇到困難,便是提起「四它」的時候;每每走過關卡,便是用上「四感」的時候;每每貴人相助,便是想起「四福」的時候;一路平安地度過,便是「四安」的呈現。心靈環保組織的建構,不正是「心五四」的實踐?過程中,不斷地思索社會的現況、眾生的需求,如何關懷人心?關懷家庭?關懷校園?關懷職場?關懷不同的族群?關懷社會?關懷自然?關懷地球?「四種環保」、「心六倫」更深化地推動,不正是法鼓山所該努力的方向?整個過程,筆者最常感恩的是創辦人——聖嚴法師!這股正向的力量,使筆者能夠引領僧俗四眾從二〇一四「和樂無諍」的一年,邁向二〇一五年及未來的「光明遠大」。

筆者在撰寫論文中,亦發現受到研究上之幾點限制: 1.專案開展過程涉及許多人事,就研究倫理之角度,內容陳 述必須有所選擇,以避免造成當事人之困擾。2. 本文是由筆者的角度論述,敘述時雖然盡量客觀,但必有筆者主觀的成分。3. 筆者沒有記日記的習慣,所幸每發生關鍵事件,筆者會發電子郵件或簡訊給相關人員,成了重要的紀錄依據,但亦發生某個重要關鍵點找不到確切日期的問題,影響研究的品質。4. 專案運作尚在起步,未來的無常變化尚難預料,未來應組成研究團隊,繼續做更詳細的紀錄,以產出更高品質的研究報告,做為未來組織建構的教材。

本篇論文終於進入尾聲了,這真是一趟療癒之旅;從一開始將支離破碎的情節,撒在白紙上,完全沒辦法建構出一個作品。隨著不斷地撰寫,不斷地整理,期間包含了身體的清理與心理的清理,也慢慢地看到論文的雛型了。執事過程中,許多的不舒服、不愉快,慢慢地轉為正向,終於體會創辦人在《美好的晚年》中所說:

在晚年裡,我所遇到的人,我所經歷的事,都是那麼可愛,如果有些不甚可愛的人、不甚可愛的事讓我遇上了,還是覺得可愛。因此,我的晚年是非常美好的。\$\oldsymbol{3}

❸ 聖嚴法師口述,胡麗桂整理,《美好的晚年》,臺北:法鼓文化,2010 年,百13。

參考文獻

一、佛典文獻

- 《妙法蓮華經》第7卷,〈觀世音菩薩普門品〉, CBETA, T09, No. 262。
- 《妙法蓮華經》第4巻,〈法師品〉, CBETA, T09, No. 262。
- 《梵網經》第2巻, CBETA, T24, No. 1484。
- 《新華嚴經論》第5巻, CBETA, T36, No. 1739。
- 《修習止觀坐禪法要》, CBETA, T46, No. 1915。
- 《大慧普覺禪師語錄》第 21 巻, CBETA, T47, No. 1998A。
- 《六祖大師法寶壇經》, CBETA, T48, No. 2008。
- 《雲棲法彙(選錄)》第 15 巻,CBETA, J33, No. B277, p. 78, c26-27。

二、現代文獻

- 上野俊靜等著,釋聖嚴譯,《中國佛教史概說》,臺北:臺灣商務 印書館,1972年初版。
- 彼得·聖吉著,郭進隆譯,《第五項修練——學習型組織的藝術與 實務》,臺北:天下文化,1994年。
- 林俊劭,〈瘋狂!不用一滴蛋液做出炒蛋——他 33 歲靠一顆蛋打造 「食物界 Google」〉,《商業周刊》1373 期,2014 年 3 月 6 日,頁 114-119。
- 釋果光、釋常悟,〈悲願傳承——法鼓山僧伽教育之回顧與展望〉,《比丘尼的天空》,臺北:財團法人伽耶山基金會, 2009年,頁173-183。
- 釋果光,〈《六祖壇經》「一行三昧」的當代實踐〉,「廣東

- 禪宗六祖文化節學術研討會——六祖禪的傳承與發展」, 廣州,2010年,網址: http://www.gdbuddhism.org/html/czyj/ detail 2013 08/22/501.html。
- 釋果光,《心靈環保經濟學》,臺北:法鼓文化,2014年。
- 釋聖嚴,《佛教入門》,臺北:法鼓文化,1979年。
- 釋聖嚴,《法鼓山的方向》,《法鼓全集》8-6,臺北:法鼓文化, 1999年。
- 釋聖嚴,《法鼓晨音》,臺北:法鼓文化,2000年。
- 釋聖嚴,《禪門修證指要》,臺北:法鼓文化,2001年。
- 釋聖嚴,《聖嚴法師教觀音法門》,臺北:法鼓文化,2003年。
- 釋聖嚴,《聖嚴法師教默照禪》,臺北:法鼓文化,2004年。
- 釋聖嚴,《聖嚴法師心靈環保》,臺北:法鼓文化,2004年。
- 釋聖嚴,《學術論考 II》,《法鼓全集》3-9,臺北:法鼓文化, 2005 年。
- 聖嚴法師口述,胡麗桂整理,《法鼓山故事》,臺北:法鼓文化, 2007年。
- 釋聖嚴,《工作好修行:聖嚴法師的 38 則職場智慧》,臺北:法鼓文化,2008 年。
- 釋聖嚴,《聖嚴法師教話頭禪》,臺北:法鼓文化,2009年。
- 釋聖嚴,《兩千年行腳》,臺北:法鼓文化,2000年。
- 釋聖嚴,《帶著禪心去上班:聖嚴法師的禪式工作學》,臺北:法 鼓文化,2010年。
- 釋聖嚴,《聖嚴法師教淨土法門》,臺北:法鼓文化,2010年。
- 釋聖嚴,《觀音妙智:觀音菩薩耳根圓通法門講要》,臺北:法鼓 文化,2010年。
- 聖嚴法師口述,胡麗桂整理,《美好的晚年》,臺北:法鼓文化, 2010年。
- 釋聖嚴,《我願無窮:美好的晚年開示集》,臺北:法鼓文化, 2011年。

・226・ 聖嚴研究

Colombo, M., 2003. "Reflexivity and narratives in action research: A discursive approach", Forum: Qualitative Social Research, Vol. 4 Issue 2.

- Connelly, F. M., Clandinin, D. J., 1990. "Stories of Experience and Narrative Inquiry". *Educational Researcher*, Vol. 19, No. 5, 2-14.
- Lewin, Kurt, 1944. *The Dynamics of Group Action*. From Educational leadership 4, New York: Henri Holt.

"PSE Organization": From Inner Peace to World Peace

Guo-Guang Shi

Provost, Dharma Drum Mountain Organization

Abstract

As the human race entered the 21st century, people began to realize that the current developmental patterns of human society were not sustainable. Pressing issues relating to the global economic crisis, the imbalance of production and consumption, financial market volatility, ecological destruction, degradation of the natural environment, climate change, poverty, and social injustice have now become quite serious. As a result, the world's religious leaders are looking for the best solutions to benefit the human race.

Master Sheng Yen (1930-2009), founder of the Dharma Drum Mountain (DDM) organization, attempted to address these contemporary global issues by introducing the groundbreaking concept of Protecting the Spiritual Environment (PSE) in 1992. More than just a religious concept or movement, PSE also provides practical ideas and methods to help face the world's situation.

However, when Master Sheng Yen passed away in 2009, several pertinent issues concerning the construction and development of DDM emerged and challenged the organization's situation. Five years after the passing of Master Sheng Yen, DDM has taken a necessary step to reflect on and weigh its present role in the advancement of both Buddhism and human society. DDM is also

・228・ 聖嚴研究

reconsidering how PSE will become the principle in leadership and management in the context of the organization, thus pioneering the inaugural idea of a PSE Organization.

This paper was conducted under the methodology of Action Research, with the purpose of studying how the leaders of DDM practice and implement Buddhism. Instead of elegant theories, this paper focuses on the personal self-reflection that arises in Chan practice. In other words, this paper aims to discuss how DDM's leaders are steering the development of the organization to a new prospect, in which the primary guidance is firmly grounded in the dual emphasis of Buddhist doctrine and Chan approaches.

First and foremost, the Hua Tou method is used to examine leaders who are self-aware and probe the core problems and sticking points that need to be solved in the organization.

Second, the Silent Illumination method is employed in analyzing how leaders see the big picture and outline the framework of a "Practicing Organization". The aims of these leaders include simplification of the organizational structure, rearrangement of job assignments, and reconstruction of values and missions. Silent Illumination is further used in assessing the efforts of how leaders endeavor to steer the whole DDM community back to the correct direction, without being constrained by fund-raising concerns. At the same time, the problems encountered in the process of reform of the system are also considered.

Third, this paper will discuss how DDM's leaders practice the method of Guan Yin in order to strengthen their unity, withstand challenges, and stride past barriers. These efforts will help plot the course of progress, leading the organization to take a great step forward and head into the "Great Light" year of 2015.

The inaugural idea of a PSE Organization, which is firmly grounded in the essence of PSE, will lay down a solid foundation for the formation of a Practicing Organization. With the integration of "the Six Ethics of the Mind" as the main pathway, and "the Fivefold Spiritual Renaissance Campaign" as the methodology, this innovation creates a brand new approach to leadership and

management in accordance with the ideal state of "Four Kinds of Environmentalism" in this modern time.

Key words: Protecting the Spiritual Environment, PSE Organization, Practicing Organization, Six Ethics of the Mind, Fivefold Spiritual Renaissance Campaign

探索聖嚴法師傳法予居士的「演派名號」

-從臨濟宗鼓山派的法脈傳承談起

釋果興

法鼓山聖嚴書院講師

林其賢

國立屏東大學中國語文學系副教授

摘要

本文從文化歷史敘述僧人的名號源流,發掘出族譜式之 演派訣傳統,釐清近代臨濟宗鼓山派完整的「演派名號」, 探索中華禪法鼓宗成立的法源背景,進而能清楚地理解,聖 嚴法師傳法予居士的思想特質,與傳承中華禪法鼓宗的時代 意義。

聖嚴法師身兼臨濟宗鼓山派、曹洞宗焦山派兩支禪宗法 脈傳承,但是二〇〇五年傳法時,並未以傳統的禪宗法脈相 傳,而是創立中華禪法鼓宗傳法予僧、俗二眾法子。中華禪 法鼓宗傳法使用之演派名號與臨濟、曹洞有何關聯?臨濟宗 鼓山派的傳承與曹洞宗焦山派的傳承,對中華禪法鼓宗新創 的演派名號有何影響?這是本文想要探討的主要問題。

傳法予在家居士,為中華禪法鼓宗傳法十分特殊之處, 此由於在禪法的國際化發展上,聖嚴法師之西方法子多為在 家居士;而亦當是由於聖嚴法師青年從軍時,以居士身分得 · 232 · 聖嚴研究

到靈源禪師的啟悟,在當時發表文章,亦已記載居士頓悟因緣,故對在家居士傳承禪法抱持肯定的立場。然而如何於傳法中對僧俗有適當之安立與區別?

法鼓宗〈傳法證書〉的「演派名號」,是依據聖嚴法師 賜字續演三十二個字,對傳法予僧、俗法子有不同的名號與 排序,顯示在聖嚴法師思想中,禪法傳承的平等觀與僧俗倫 理觀,為僧俗倫理做了巧妙的安排,同時也為中華禪法鼓宗 的承先與創新密切綰合。

關鍵詞:聖嚴法師、臨濟宗鼓山派、中華禪法鼓宗、傳法證 書、演派名號、居士法子 探索聖嚴法師傳法予居士的「演派名號」・233・

一、前言

聖嚴法師晚年創立「中華禪・法鼓宗」●,同時說明創宗是因為「法鼓山的禪法,繼承了臨濟、曹洞兩大法脈的合流」;而且法鼓山的禪法「在承襲傳統禪法之外又有創新,所以必須重新立宗。」②立宗同時,於二○○五年九月舉行「傳法大典」,將〈中華禪法鼓宗法脈傳承證書〉交付十二位法子,象徵交付傳持法脈的重責大任。這次傳法並非聖嚴法師首度傳法,然而確是法鼓宗立宗後首度傳法、首度交付〈中華禪法鼓宗法脈傳承證書〉,③意義仍有不同。

法鼓宗創立之後,有關法鼓宗為何「創宗」?法鼓宗「宗法/教法」內容為何?法鼓宗的「宗」與歷史上的「宗派」有何異同?……,這些都是當代佛教研究者亟欲了解的論題。本文擬就聖嚴法師傳法予居士此一極為特別的作為,探討「法鼓宗對居士傳法的意謂」(第五節)。而討論此

[●] 聖嚴法師於二○○四年九月起至十月,對法鼓山僧團講授〈中華禪法鼓宗〉,而後於二○○六年三月二十至二十五日修增訂,於同年七月定稿,同年(二○○六)十月,並同〈我的使命與責任〉、〈承先啟後〉等文為《承先啟後的中華禪法鼓宗》,由聖嚴教育基金會刊行。因此,創宗時間之內部說明為二○○四年,對外發布則為二○○六年。

[●] 見:聖嚴法師,《承先啟後的中華禪法鼓宗》,臺北:聖嚴教育基金會,2006年10月,頁48。

[●] 傳法大典報導見:《法鼓》雜誌,190期,2005年10月1日,版1。聖嚴法師「在典禮中強調,這次是任務型傳法,接法的十二位法子,有的在禪法修行上有深厚基礎,有的在佛學、教育、文化等方面貢獻良多,都在法鼓山體系內長期奉獻。」

問題前,須先了解:「法鼓宗的演派名號是什麼?」(第四節)以及「法鼓宗的演派名號是怎麼來的?」(第二、三節)。

二、臨濟演派・鼓山名號

由於前人學者對禪宗的名號研究,多為斷代史研究,較 少貫通源流述其本末之探究,故本文第一節先從文化背景, 敘述僧人名號源流,發掘出族譜式之演派訣傳統,再以虛雲 老和尚為例,詳明鼓山湧泉寺的演派名號,及十方傳法的 「法派」系統,探尋出聖嚴法師傳承禪宗的法源。

(一)四個字的僧侶名字來由

華人姓名通常為三個字,而名字通常只有兩個字,只有複姓或冠夫姓時,才會出現四個字。但華人出家為僧後,法名常是四個字,因為僧侶之法名有「名」有「字」,「名」與「字」各兩個字合共四個字,這還不包括姓「釋」在內。

只是華夏禮儀中「避名為敬」,不但須迴避君父尊長之名,也不可直呼他人姓名,故而有避名稱字、以號代名之禮,在這種文化風俗下,僧侶也衍生出相對應之禮儀,一是避名為敬,但取下字;二是以其所居,而顯其人,所以僧侶名字通常會出現三到四個字。

③

如「釋慧遠」,除了東晉廬山慧遠外,隋朝也有一位 慧遠法師——「隋京師淨影寺釋慧遠」。後世為區分兩人, 便在法名前冠以地名與寺名,分別為「廬山慧遠」、「廬山 遠」與「淨影慧遠」、「淨影遠」。僧人名號繁複,往往有 多人同一僧名的情況,名號愈顯重要,以慧遠為例,在藏經 就有九位,四位如表一。

表一:

廬山	東林寺	正覺、圓悟(號)	慧遠 (334-416) 東晉 淨宗初祖
	淨影寺		慧遠 (523-592) 隋朝 釋義高祖
藍田	悟真寺		慧遠(597-647)唐朝 吉藏之弟子
	靈隱寺	佛海、瞎堂(號)	慧遠 (1103-1176) 宋朝 濟公之師

僧人名號明確地出現四字名號,是唐·淨覺編纂的《楞伽師資記》,其中記載「資州智詵」、「莘州惠藏」、「隨州玄約」、「嵩山老安」、「潞州法如」、「韶州惠能」與「越州義方」等名,隨後杜朏《傳法寶紀》(716-732)、李邕〈大照禪師塔銘〉(742),宗密《禪門師資承襲圖》(830以後)也都開始使用四字名號。

●

[●] 華人出家後統一姓「釋」,這是始於東晉道安(312-385)的提倡,不過僧人在很少數的情況才會自稱姓「釋」。

[●] 汪娟、黃青萍,〈唐宋禪師名號之發展及其用例〉,《禪學研究》第9輯,南京:江蘇人民出版社,2011年,頁77-95。

[●] 參考:DDBC Person Authority Database 人名規範資料庫,慧遠。網址: http://authority.ddbc.edu.tw/person/。

[●] 黃青萍、汪娟,〈唐宋禪師三字名號之研究——兼論詩僧名號的使用〉,政治大學中文學系主辦,「第四屆東亞宗教文獻國際學術研討會」,2014年3月15-16日。

汪娟、黃青萍,《明清燈錄中有關名號與法嗣的問題》,佛光山人間佛教研究院等主辦,「宗教實踐與文學創作暨《中國宗教文學史》編纂國際學術研討會」,2014年1月10-14日。

燈錄中統一體例則始自普濟《五燈會元》(1252)。若要分析辨認燈錄中最完整的禪師名號,則以宋代編纂的燈錄中,《天聖廣燈錄》(1029)與《嘉泰普燈錄》(1204)連綴之名號為準,可參考汪娟與黃青萍的研究,在辨認名號上依序為:「地名+山名(或寺院名)+賜號(師號或諡號)+字號(表字或道號、別號、庵號、室名)+法名+稱謂」之結構。以虛雲老和尚為例,他在曹洞宗的連綴名號即成如下:福州(地名)鼓山(山名)+湧泉(寺院)聖箭(堂號)+虛雲(自號)幻遊(改字)+德清(表字)古巖(法名)+禪師。

(二)禪宗演派名號的傳統

面對禪宗這麼複雜的僧侶名號,在傳統燈錄中是如何編輯宗派世系的次序呢?主要是由於「演派名號」的出現。唐末社會崩散,歷五代而離亂更甚,至宋朝宗族意識及宗族結構復興,於是有歐陽修(1007-1072)、蘇洵(1009-1066)修族譜,而後漸成風氣,❸這也與社會普遍認同的宗族制度互相增上。張載(1020-1078)曾論宗族與族譜關係云:

管攝天下人心,收宗族、厚風俗,使人不忘本,須是明譜系、世族與立宗子法。宗法不立則人不知統系來處,

古人亦鮮有不知來處者。宗子法廢,後世尚譜牒,猶有遺 風;譜牒文廢,人家不知來處,無百年之家,骨肉無統, 雖至親,恩亦薄。

②

而為了宗族輩分的辨認,於是有「字輩」的出現。例如:宋 太祖趙匡胤(927-976)為後代規定的十四個字〈字輩譜〉

●、歐陽家譜中有《六宗世次總歌》。

從現存明清典籍《禪門日誦》之〈佛祖心燈〉的演派規

[●] 錢大昕論〈郡望〉云:「五季之亂,譜牒散失;至宋而私譜盛行,朝廷不復過而問焉。」參見:《十駕齋養新錄》第12卷,臺北:廣文書局,1968年1月影刻版,頁616。

[●] 參見:張載,〈經學理窟·宗法〉,《張載集》,臺北:里仁書局, 1981年12月,頁258-259。

[●] 最早的正式字輩起源於宋朝,宋太祖趙匡胤為後代規定了十四個字輩, 構成一副七言類詩體對聯「匡德惟從世令子,伯師希與孟由宜」,這是 目前所見到的最早的正式字輩。

^{● 《}卍新纂續藏經》第88冊,《宗教律諸宗演派》,頁599。

[●] 周裕鍇,〈略談唐宋僧人的法名與表字〉,《佛學研究中心學報》第9期,2004年7月,頁119-126。

演派名號的傳統,如鼓山湧泉寺派下,源自臨濟宗普陀 山前寺系演派訣的名號,如表二。**⑤**

(三)鼓山派的法脈傳承

表二:

- ·知剛惟柔(慧空聖嚴)傳承臨濟正宗系統表
- 一、曹溪慧能→二、南嶽懷讓→三、馬祖道一→四、百丈懷海→五、黃蘗希運→
- 01. **臨濟義玄**ightarrow 02. 興化存獎ightarrow 03. 南院慧顒ightarrow 04. 風穴延ightarrow 05. 守山省ightarrow
- 06. 汾陽善昭→ 07. 石霜楚圓→ 黃龍慧南 (黃龍系)

08. 楊岐方會(楊岐系)→09. 白雲守端→

- 10. 五祖法演→ 11. 圜悟克勤→ 大慧宗杲 (話頭禪)
 - ^L 12. 虎丘紹**隆→** 13. 應庵曇**華→** 14. 密庵咸**傑→**
- 15. 破庵祖先→ 16. 無準師範→ 17. 斷橋妙倫→ 18. 方山文寶→ 19. 無見先覩→
- 20. 白雲智度→ 21. 古拙昌俊→ 22. 無際明悟→ 23. 月溪耀澄→ 24. 夷峰鏡寧→
- 25. 寶芳智進→ 26. 野翁慧曉→ 27. 無趣清空→ 28. 無幻淨沖→ 29. 南明道廣→
- 30. 鴛湖德用→ 31. 高菴圓清 (鼓山派) → 32. 本智明覺→ 33. 紫柏真可→
- 34. 端旭如弘→ 35. 純潔性奎→ 36. 慈雲海俊→ 37. 質生寂文→ 38. 端員照華→
- 39. 其岸曹明→ 40. 弢巧通聖→ 41. 悟修心空→ 42. 宏化源悟→ 43. 祥青唐松→
- 44. 守道續先→ 45. 正岳本韶→ 46. 永暢覺乘→ 47. 方來昌遠→ 48. 豁悟隆參→
- 49. 維紹修燦→ 50. 奇量仁繁→ 51. 妙蓮聖華→ 52. 鼎峰果成→ 53. 善慈常開→
- 54. 德清演徹(虚雲古巖)→55. 佛慧寬印→56. 靈源宏妙→57. 知剛惟柔(慧空聖嚴)
- 臨濟正宗源流備註:
- 1. 臨濟源流訣:

南嶽懷讓道一海,運玄獎顯沼不住,念昭圓會端演勤, 隆華傑于先範具,倫堅覩度俊悟澄,寧進曉空沖廣。

2. 突空智板禪師演派訣:

智慧清淨,道德圓明,真如性海,寂照普通。

3. 五台峨嵋普陀前寺演派源流訣:

心源廣續,本覺昌隆,能仁聖果,常演寬宏,

惟傳法印,證悟會融,堅持戒定,永紀祖宗。

● 中國佛教叢林晚近以來,依住持人選產生的方式分為剃派與法派。聖嚴 法師曾說明:「歷來中國佛教的寺院,傳承制度有兩種:1.是傳賢的十 方制;2.是傳徒子徒孫的子孫制。十方制是從已經出家而在十方參學有 了成就的僧眾之中,選拔考驗合格者傳法。然後再從有德僧中選拔適當

③ 參見:《禪門日誦》之〈佛祖心燈〉,四川:成都文殊院,1995年,頁 367-398。「臨濟正宗五台峨嵋普陀前寺演派源流訣」見表二。

[●] 張雪松,〈晚明以來僧人名號及譜系研究〉,《玄奘佛學研究》第15期,2011年3月,頁264。

[●] 此資料為筆者整理自:聖嚴法師傳承靈源禪師之傳法證書《校正星燈集》之臨濟宗傳承。

傳承與鼓山派有密切關係,聖嚴法師在剃度派與十方派的傳承名號,都是臨濟宗的法脈傳承, **②** 故今即以虛雲老和尚法名來考察其法脈傳承。

虚雲老和尚十八歲(1858年,咸豐八年)時投福州鼓山湧泉寺,禮常開法師為師剃度出家,「剃派」傳承是臨濟宗,法名是字德清,名「演」徹。次年在妙蓮和尚座下受具足戒,所以早年虚雲和尚是以字之「德清」為世所知,到了五十歲後才自號虚雲,改字幻遊。

至光緒十八年(1892),虛雲和尚五十三歲,受臨濟衣鉢于妙蓮和尚,臨濟宗四十三世;受曹洞衣鉢于耀成和尚,曹洞宗四十七世。❸此時,所受的臨濟宗是「法派」傳承,法名是德清「性」徹,曹洞宗所受的也是「法派」,法名為德清「古」巖。❸

擔任寺院的住持一職。所謂傳給徒子徒孫,是在各該寺落髮剃度出家的弟子,成人之後,就有權利繼承上一代的住持職位,這種制度,如果沒有好的師父,也缺乏資質優秀,道心堅固的出家子孫,難免會產生流弊。所以子孫道場的寺院,不如傳賢的十方寺院來得謹嚴。相反的,如果沒有子孫道場的剃度因緣,十方道場也可能斷了僧源。」(《火宅清涼》,《法鼓全集》6-5,頁 203。)

- ☑ 詳後三之(二)節。
- ◎ 淨慧法師〈虛雲和尚行業記──紀念虛雲和尚圓寂三十周年〉云:「中國佛教叢林晚近以來,按其住持人選產生的方式而分為傳賢、傳法、子孫三種類型,鼓山即為傳法叢林,且臨濟、曹洞二宗並傳。虛老受戒後,頗受妙蓮和尚器重,遂於光緒十八年(1892)受臨濟衣鉢于妙蓮和尚,為臨濟宗四十三世;受曹洞衣鉢于耀成和尚,為曹洞宗四十七世。筆者曾親見虛老接法時法卷二件,虛老接法的年代即根據法卷的記載。」(網址:http://read.goodweb.cn/news/news view.asp?newsid=6108)
- 據虚雲撰的《曹洞宗四十五世妙蓮老和尚塔銘》,和尚諱地華,字妙蓮,其落款即題:「孫古巖虚雲敬題」。

依《虚雲和尚全集》之〈虚雲老和尚五宗傳法偈〉中, 只知虛雲和尚傳承臨濟宗的「法派」,為龍池幻有系下之福 經**空**印禪師,尚難以詳細確認其歷代傳承與演派訣,今對照 《宗教律諸宗演派》可得臨濟宗四十五世(左欄),與曹洞 宗五十世(右欄),臨濟、曹洞並傳十方的「法派」,如表 三傳承:

表三:

・臨濟宗的「法派」	・曹洞宗的「法派」
雪峰祖定禪師演派二十字。	無明慧經系演派二十字。
(龍池幻有禪師傳法亦用此派)	慧元道大興 法界一鼎新
祖道戒定宗 方廣正圓通	通天並徹地 耀古復騰今
行超明實際 了達悟真空	(無明慧經系即為鼓山歷代住持接法
龍池幻有禪師「空」字下	曹洞宗的源頭)
續演二十字	
覺性本常寂 心惟法界同	
如緣宏聖教 正法永昌隆	
三十七世 智山了願禪師	四十四世 奇量徹繁禪師
三十八世 印照達聽禪師	四十五世 妙蓮地華禪師
三十九世 照千悟亮禪師	四十六世 鼎峰耀成禪師
四十世 佛海真覺禪師	四十七世 德清古岩(虚雲)
四十一世 福經空印禪師	四十八世 (淨慧復性禪師等)
四十二世 妙蓮覺華禪師	四十九世 (海音騰了禪師等)
四十三世 虚雲性徽禪師	五 十 世(惟因今果禪師等)
四十四世 (乘妙本煥禪師等)	註:禪宗傳法每一世皆有多人,本表意
四十五世(一誠常妙禪師等)	在顯示演派訣,故只錄單人。

● 參見:釋淨慧主編,《虛雲和尚全集》第3冊,《詩偈》,鄭州:中州古籍出版社,2009年,頁210-225。對照:《卍新纂續藏經》第八十八冊,《宗教律諸宗演派》,頁559。臨濟宗四十三代祖師典故另見網址:http://www.zenheart.hk/viewthread.php?action=printable&tid=15270。

還有,虛雲老和尚自身傳承的法脈與住持第幾代,**②**又有何關係呢?據〈增訂鼓山列祖聯芳集〉岑學呂在附記有云:

謹案虚雲和尚出家鼓山。鼓山自明代以來。臨濟曹洞並傳。妙蓮老和尚。即以臨濟而接曹洞法脈者也。蓮老以兩宗「正脈」付之老人。由臨濟至虚老人是四十三代。由曹洞至虚老人是四十七代。

······至若聯芳集中。列虛老人為百三十代等等。係指歷 代住持而言。「非正脈」也。❷

所謂「正脈」是指鼓山的正脈傳承,是臨濟、曹洞並傳十方的「法派」,「非正脈」是鼓山歷代住持名義上雖然還是曹洞宗,但鼓山當時在實質上已經變成了子孫道場,所以在虛雲和尚年譜中,自述九十歲時住持鼓山後,即大力改革僧制人事,希望鼓山回復成十方傳法的「法派」。 3

三、剃法交錯・聖嚴傳承

(一) 聖嚴法師在曹洞宗焦山派的傳承

聖嚴法師十四歲在南通狼山的法聚庵出家,是臨濟宗

剃度子孫派的沙彌,法名是「證覺常進」。❷至三十歲(1959)依止東初老人再度出家,也是屬於臨濟宗剃度子孫派的沙彌,法名為「慧空聖嚴」。至美國弘化後,於四十七歲(1976)時,傳承東初老人曹洞法脈,再又於四十九歲(1978)得法於靈源長老,賜名「知剛惟柔」。❸

聖嚴法師弘法時,自述由東初老人傳承臨濟宗與曹洞宗兩宗法脈,雖然焦山在「剃派」方面還是臨濟宗的傳承,ঊ但是「慧空聖嚴」是東初老人依觀音庵「剃派」給的法名, 鄧與焦山「剃派」無關。所以雖然東初老人的焦山「法派」傳承是曹洞宗,可是傳付曹洞宗法脈時,並沒有另給聖嚴法師一個焦山派十方傳法的曹洞宗名號。ঊ

[●] 參見:陳錫璋編撰,《福州鼓山湧泉寺歷代住持禪師傳略》,臺南:智 者出版社,1996年。列有一百三十四代住持詳細資料。

❷ 釋淨慧主編,《虛雲和尚全集》第2冊,《書信·文記》,鄭州:中州 古籍出版社,2009年,頁181-185。

❷ 釋淨慧主編,《虛雲和尚全集》第5冊,《年譜》,鄭州:中州古籍出版計,2009年,頁93-100。

❸ 參見:〈本刊職員名錄〉,《學僧天地》創刊號,上海:靜安佛教學院,1948年1月1日,頁27。

⁵ 參見:林其賢,《聖嚴法師七十年譜》,臺北:法鼓文化,2000年。

[●] 焦山定慧寺雖是十方選賢,焦山小庵在「剃派」方面,是由憨山德清所傳的臨濟宗,拈有三十二字曰:「勝義敷宣,寂光朗徽,凡聖齊平,修證超越,識果知因,融通該攝,悟最上乘,恒遵法則」。焦山各小庵即用此字序直至民國。見:茗山法師主編,《焦山志》,1999年,頁63。再參:《卍新纂續藏經》第73冊,《憨山老人夢遊集》第20卷,〈焦山法系序〉,頁607。及《法鼓全集》6-2,《法源血源》,頁162-174。

[●] 參見:釋果徹,〈東初老人簡譜〉,《中華佛學研究》第2期,臺北:中華佛學研究所,1998年,頁1。

⑤ 「(1976)春天起,正式在紐約大覺寺開始教授修持方法。禪重傳承,故於那年九月,先師 東初老人到紐約訪問時,請示能否得其曹洞法派的傳承,他老則說剃度弟子與傳法弟子有別,而近世叢林所謂傳法,不在於心法而在於傳承寺主方丈的位子;人不在焦山,雖可得其法而不可承其位。於是說過了就算,未有任何事可做的。」(見《禪門修證指要》,《法鼓全集》4-1,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年,頁255。)

焦山定慧寺十方傳法的曹洞宗名號,其演派法脈傳承如 表四所示。❷

表四:

湛然圓澄禪師	曹洞宗三十九世	月輝了禪(定慧寺第八十三代方丈)
演派十六字	曹洞宗四 十 世	流長悟春(定慧寺第八十四代方丈)
圓明淨智 德行福祥	曹洞宗四十一世	大須真山(定慧寺第八十五代方丈)
澄清覺海	曹洞宗四十二世	昌道常照 (定慧寺第八十六代方丈)
了悟真常		
巨超清恒禪師	曹洞宗四十三世	峰屏肇圓 (定慧寺第八十七代方丈)
續拈三十二字	曹洞宗四十四世	德峻自達 (定慧寺第八十八代方丈)
肇自迦文 鐙傳法界	曹洞宗四十五世	吉堂迦泰(定慧寺第八十九代方丈)
寂光朗照	曹洞宗四十六世	智光文覺 (定慧寺第九十代方丈)
千萬億載 心誠相印	曹洞宗四十七世	東初鐙朗(聖嚴法師的師父)
定即是戒	曹洞宗四十八世	茗山傳薪(主編《焦山志》)
用寶斯言佛能永在	曹洞宗四十九世	戒忍法進(曾任普陀山全山方丈)
101 MO142 P		(註:禪宗傳法每一世皆有多人,本表意 在顯示演派訣,故只錄單人。)

(二)聖嚴法師在臨濟宗鼓山派的傳承

鼓山的臨濟宗剃度子孫的情況,就與十方傳法的「法派」不同,在《校正星燈集》之末附本支源流系有云:「……今將諸祖。以及來賢。『雜法』名字稱呼順序。緝為聯芳。免至失傳尋源。無啟紊亂之誤。」❸此即將「剃派」

與「法派」的名字分開處理,不同於鼓山新任住持就任時,接受鼓山派十方傳法的傳承名號之演字規則,在「剃派」的《校正星燈集》中,是依虛雲老和尚演派的「名」與「號」演字規則,做為剃度子孫的「演派名號」。故在〈虛雲老和尚五宗傳法偈〉之中,所列的五宗包含臨濟宗、曹洞宗,都是十方傳法派的偈子,而剃度子孫並未有傳法偈。❸

從鼓山傳承臨濟宗的兩種演派訣的法脈,以及虛雲和尚 在臨濟宗的兩個名號,可以明確得知聖嚴法師在鼓山法脈傳 承的師承關係,如表五所示。

表五:

2/11	
臨濟宗的「剃派」 普陀山前寺系	臨濟宗的「法派」 龍池幻有系
心源廣續 本覺昌隆 能仁聖果 常演寬宏 惟傳法印 正悟會融 堅持戒定 永繼祖宗	覺性本常寂 心惟法界同 如緣宏聖教 正法永昌隆
善慈 常開	妙蓮 覺華
古巖 演徹(虚雲)	徳清 性徹(虚雲)
佛慧 寬印	聖空 本昭(意昭)
靈源 宏妙	一誠 常妙
知剛 惟柔(聖嚴)	惟賢 寂靖

通常在燈錄之中,我們可以看到由師父為徒弟取四字 法名之時,其中「名」依演派字訣,而「字」的命名,是自

[●] 此表四參考諸多來源,為完整的傳承考證,因考索甚為繁複,當另文處理。

同註❷, 頁 176-180。

[●] 參見:釋淨慧主編,《虚雲和尚全集》第3冊,《詩偈》,鄭州:中州 古籍出版社,2009年,頁210-225。

由取的,只有「號」的命名則由徒弟自取,而且也是自由取 的。虛雲老和尚自創的「剃派」傳承名號的詳細規則是如 何?在《校正星燈集》中有云: ூ

智祖立派。六傳至圓清禪師為三十一代。今於圓字下 二十三傳至演字。得五十四代。虛雲因觀演字下又過十四 傳。已到定字。餘文將完。故於宗字下勉繼其末。續演六 十四字。外演「號派」八十字。以待後賢。

於「名派」宗字畢。即繼取慈字。

慈悲喜拾 大雄世尊……(「名派」續演六十四字。) 附「號派」八十字。如取法名。「名派」取演字。「字派」取古字。

古佛靈知見 星燈總一同·····(「號派」續演八十字。) ❸

細察這**源自曹洞宗的「古」**字(參見前表三、表四), 當知虛雲老和尚在續演八十字之外,另有深意。他指示: 「如取法名。『名派』取演字。『字派』取古字」,舉的就 是他自己的例子。

古佛靈知見 星燈總一同 冥陽孰殊異 萬化體皆容 鏡鑑群情暢 碧潭皎月濃 隨緣認得渠 縱橫任西東 顯密三藏教 禪律陰騭叢 修契幻華夢 應物悉玲瓏 怍悛奮悠志 寶珠自瑩瑛 嚴奉善逝敕 杲日滿天紅。 名派的「演」字,是他臨濟宗「剃派」法名:德清 「演」徹;字派的「古」字則是他曹洞宗「法派」法名:德清 「古」巖。兩脈法名:「德清演徹」和「德清古巖」裡上半部 的「德清」是「字/表字」,下半部的「演徹」、「古巖」才 是「名」。按虛雲和尚上文「名派」取演字。「字派」取古字 的指示,則他傳承下的法名即是:「古巖演徹」。◆

在這裡,我們看到了虛雲老和尚自創取法名的做法, 是以「號」規範「字」為「演派名號」,而且將本來臨濟宗 「剃派」的「名」,接上了源於曹洞宗「法派」的「號」, 這是一項重要線索,因為鼓山的「法派」傳承是臨濟、曹洞 並傳的,而虛雲老和尚這樣規範後,臨濟宗的「剃派」也就 包含了「法派」的性質。

(三)剃派與法派的交錯

如前所說,既然東初老人給的「慧空聖嚴」是觀音庵剃派的法名,靈源和尚給的「知剛惟柔」呢?是剃派或法派? 靈源和尚在鼓山派湧泉寺出家,由虛雲老和尚親自剃度,因 年紀輕序為徒孫,稱虛雲老和尚為師公。 3 從靈源和尚傳承 的傳法證書《校正星燈集》來看,用印與版本是在南華寺, 雖然靈源和尚是受法於虛雲老和尚住持的曹溪南華寺, 3 但

同註❷,頁 176-180。

❸ 虚雲「號派」續演八十字:

❸ 字為表字,在上,名在下。

⑤ 參見:〈我對不起師公老和尚〉,釋淨慧主編,《虛雲和尚全集》第7冊,《追思錄》,鄭州:中州古籍出版社,2009年,頁131-133。

[●] 參見:釋聖嚴,〈我的修行與傳承〉中「靈源老和尚——喝我一聲,讓我放下」一節,《法鼓》雜誌第139至144期。

我們並未見到虛雲老和尚有另給靈源和尚傳法法名,所以靈源和尚確實只有一個臨濟宗「剃派」的法名「靈源宏妙」, 而並沒有臨濟宗龍池幻有系「法派」的法名與傳法偈(詳見 計到之〈虛雲老和尚五宗傳法偈〉的法名群組)。

也就是說:靈源和尚傳承的是臨濟宗的「剃派」法名,但是到了臺灣創建十方大覺禪寺之後,傳法給聖嚴法師的法名,卻變成有「法派」的性質。我們可發現:從靈源和尚對傳承《校正星燈集》的看法來說,當時並沒有刻意分別「剃派」與「法派」,實因早自虛雲老和尚續「演派名號」的做法,將曹洞宗「法派」的「號」與臨濟宗「剃派」的「名」合併的結果——因而《校正星燈集》即具有傳法證書的性質。

聖嚴法師兩次出家所以有兩個法名(常進、聖嚴),加 上兩次的傳法只有一個法名,所以前後共有三個法名。但這 三個法名,都是臨濟宗系統。聖嚴法師在臨濟宗普陀山前寺 系傳承的三個名號,其師承關係如表六。❺

所以聖嚴法師的在家人生曾經經歷三個俗名:乳名「保康」、學名「志德」、更名「採薇」;出家生涯則有三個法名:少年「常進」、三十歲「聖嚴」、四十九歲「惟柔」,以及六個以上的筆名(醒世將軍、張本、常不輕、如如、無住沙門、瓔珞關主)。❸

表六:

狼山的師承 「剃派」	東初老人的師承 「剃派」	靈源禪師的師承 「法派 」	
心源廣續 本覺昌隆 能仁聖果 常演寬宏 惟傳法印 正悟會融 堅持戒定 永繼祖宗	心源廣續 本覺昌隆 能仁聖果 常演寬宏 惟傳法印 正悟會融 堅持戒定 永繼祖宗	心源廣續 本覺昌隆 能仁聖果 常演寬宏 惟傳法印 正悟會融 堅持戒定 永繼祖宗 (古佛靈知見)	
太師祖 筍香老人	靜禪 能_	善慈 常開	
曾師祖 貫通老人	東初 仁曙	古岩 演徹(虚雲)	
師 祖 朗慧上人	慧空 聖嚴	佛慧 寬印	
剃度師 蓮塘上人	正湛 果如	靈源 宏妙	
證覺 常進		知剛 惟柔(聖嚴)	

四、法鼓禪門・演派名號

(一)禪修悟道的因緣

一九五八年春天身著軍服的張採薇居士,在內心尚有諸 多煩惱的情況下,臨時在寺院通鋪上請求靈源老和尚開示, 這段因緣際會的悟道歷程,日後就成為接上禪宗法脈的重要 關鍵,聖嚴法師敘述道:

突然間,老和尚用力一拍床板,發出一聲巨響,同時喝道:「放下著,睡覺去!」頓時使我在一瞬間覺得雲消霧開,好像問什麼問題都是多餘的了。

·····一九七八年,我回到臺灣,去探望基隆十方大覺 寺的方丈靈源老和尚,問他:「還認識我是誰嗎?我是曾

^{参見:林其賢,〈聖嚴法師之名號與法脈〉,《國立屏東商業技術學院院報》第2期,2000年6月,頁215-221。}

在高雄一個道場,與老和尚同榻,被您大喝一聲的那個軍人。」他說:「哦!記得囉!二十年前我教你放下的人來了。」當他知道我已在美國傳播禪法,也主持禪七修行,便說:「該給你一個名字才好。」於是穿起海青披上祖衣,在他的師公虛雲老和尚塑像之前,帶我頂禮,並給我取名「知剛惟柔」。

③

因為這中間總共經過二十年的長久時間,在此要探討的是, 一位煩惱的軍人在當時,真的發生過「頓悟」這件事嗎?當 初張採薇在悟道的當時,或者隨後是否有任何文字記載留 下來?

從當年(1958)五月,張採薇在《人生》雜誌發表一篇 〈人心的安頓和自性的超脫〉說到:

所謂頓悟,乃是最後一念的點破或最後一緣的成熟,比如通常所說「萬事俱備,只欠東風」, ……同樣的,我們學佛,因為往昔生中的根機深厚,所以生到現世,只要偶受一個禪門所說的機鋒,便可一念點破,而頓超悟入凡上的聖域。那麼所謂頓悟,也沒有什麼神祕可言了。⑩

兩年後(1960)張採薇三十一歲,在東初老人座下再

度出家成為僧侶,隨後經歷六年的閉關生活。對於當年「頓悟」這件事,聖嚴法師一九六三年在關房中寫下〈什麼叫作頓與漸?〉他說:

這個問題,我在一九五八年,就已有了這樣的見解: 「所謂頓悟,乃是最後一念的點破,或最後一緣的成熟,……就如一個孵了二十來天的雞蛋,如因小雞無力掙開蛋殼,經母雞輕輕用嘴一啄,小雞便會脫然而生,並且生氣盎然,但這母雞的一啄,也是最後一緣的助成。」

或許這些都可視為「夫子自道」的經驗之談,而不論聖嚴法 師於何時悟道,至少一九七八年時,四十九歲的聖嚴法師得 法於靈源長老,賜名「知剛惟柔」時,即可說是名副其實的 禪師。

(二) 禪法西來向居士傳法

聖嚴法師原不自以為禪門中人,也不以近世禪林風格為 然。然因日本參學經驗,並得到禪門高人鼓勵,於是到美國 教導禪修:

我始終不以自己是禪門中人,也有些不以近世的禪林風格為然。直到去日本留學,參訪了好幾位禪師,也打了精

⁹ 同註**6**。

[●] 釋聖嚴,《神通與人通》,《法鼓全集》3-2,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年,頁78。(此文為張採薇在1958年5月10日新店病中,投稿於《人生》雜誌10卷6期)

[●] 釋聖嚴,〈什麼叫作頓與漸?〉,《正信的佛教》,《法鼓全集》5-2, 臺北:法鼓文化,1999年,頁148。

進禪七,並且得到龍澤寺派原田祖岳的傳人伴鐵牛老師的 指導和鼓勵,以為我可以在美國教化而不必顧慮語文的阻 隔。所以由一九七六年春天起,正式在紐約大覺寺開始教 授修持方法。②

美國的禪修指導從週末禪修班開始,而後開始打禪七,於是 有後來臺美兩地定期禪七的舉行,並不定期受邀至各國舉行 禪七指導。

馬來西亞的繼程法師自述:於一九八〇年在臺灣中華佛教文化館,依止聖嚴師父打禪七,得個入處受印可。隨後奉師父慈命,回馬教靜坐禪修法門。一九八六年赴臺請示師父,師父慈悲允可,並依禪宗傳統正式傳法,續接近代偉大禪匠虛雲老和尚傳承法脈,成為虛老下第四代弟子,法名「傳顯見密」。

⑤

一九九二年四月,聖嚴法師至英格蘭威爾斯指導禪七,禪期中小參,法師印證禪眾中有位居士約翰·克魯克(John H. Crook),曾經有三次見性的經驗。❸隔年(1993)六

月,法師在東初禪寺主持第六十次禪七圓滿日時,即為英國 的約翰·克魯克舉行隆重的傳法儀式,法名「傳燈見諦」, 成為臨濟宗第五十八世的傳承者。❸

自一九七八年聖嚴法師得到靈源老和尚的傳法,三年後,一九八〇年就有禪眾悟道,至一九八六年、一九九三年才又傳法給下一代法子,這與聖嚴法師個人的狀況,悟道後先自修,過一段時間再傳法的安排是一致的,而且傳法的名號,是根據虛雲老和尚傳承下來的法脈,師承靈源和尚的臨濟宗傳承。

聖嚴法師傳法前期所傳承的名號與靈源老和尚的關係, 如表七。

表七:

鼓山湧泉寺 [。] 聖嚴沒	專承《校正星燈集》 5師 傳法前期
法名: 臨濟宗三十二字	法號:虚雲續演八十字
心源廣續 本覺昌隆	古佛靈知見 星燈總一同
能仁聖果 常演寬宏	冥陽孰殊異 萬化體皆容
惟傳法印 正悟會融	鏡鑑群情暢 碧潭皎月濃
堅持戒定 永繼祖宗	隨緣認得渠 縱橫任西東
演徹	古巖 (虚雲)
寬印	佛慧
宏妙	靈源
惟柔	知剛 (聖嚴)
傳顯	見密(繼程)
傳燈	見諦 (John H. Crook)

[■] 釋聖嚴,《行雲流水》,《法鼓全集》6-8,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年, 頁 276-277。

[●] 參見:〈繼程法師小檔〉,《摩提》,網址:http://www.ccmati.com/index.php? option=com_content&view=article&id=4&Itemid=167&lang=zh。

參見: Chan Comes West, p. 35, Dharma Drum Publications, New York. 2002. 約翰·克魯克自述有三次的見性經驗,並向聖嚴法師請求,希望印證見性這件事,不要讓別人知道。故在《法鼓全集》中找不到紀錄,只有在《東西南北》頁 245-260 中,約翰·克魯克見到他的學生賽門·查爾德(Simon Child)醫生有點見地,請求聖嚴法師確認之後,聖嚴法師說了「恭喜」。

(三) 傳法證書的演派名號

上節提到,聖嚴法師「傳法前期」為法子所取名號及其依據。這意味法師在「傳法後期」是有所不同的。

據法鼓山僧團現有文件,聖嚴法師在二〇〇〇年十二月十日,續演了三十二字法「號」。這看似為了二〇〇一年創設法鼓山僧伽大學,為新進就讀佛學院的學僧而考量,這一屆學僧,剃度法名轉成「常」字輩、法號「淨」字輩。因此在二〇〇〇年七月刊行的《法鼓》雜誌中,傅佩芳介紹三位〈師父的西方弟子們〉,稱呼約翰·克魯克的法名還是為「傳燈見諦」。 可是在 Chan Comes West(《禪法西傳》),聖嚴法師文中介紹四位的西方弟子,已經將法號「見」字輩,改為法號「淨」字輩,也就是說約翰·克魯克的名號已經從「傳燈見諦」變為「傳燈淨諦」;而該書在聖嚴法師所寫的序之落款日期,卻是為二〇〇〇年十一月二十七日・紐約象岡道場,這就是本文所發現到最早的資料。 伊

原來這是因為二〇〇〇年夏天,聖嚴法師在紐約州的北部象岡道場,主持生平第一場四十九天默照禪修,禪期中他敦促禪眾用功練習,還戲稱:「我想找一位法脈接班人,讓我能夠成為一派宗師。」禪期後邀請四位居士:約翰·克魯克、賽門·查爾德、麥克斯·卡林(Max Kalin)、查可·

安德列塞維克(Žarko Andričević),每一位寫一篇介紹文章,介紹自己是如何來練習禪修,以及在修行道路上的體驗。❸

Chan Comes West 除了居士自我介紹,如何修道、悟道,聖嚴法師也說明傳法的條件、法脈的源流,並說明為何法名是源自臨濟宗。在〈我的修行與傳承〉的〔註 13〕中說:「當他從東初老和尚手中接受臨濟和曹洞兩宗的傳承時,並沒有曹洞宗這邊的法名.而這就成為從聖嚴法師手上接受法鼓宗傳承人的案例,當他們要接受臨濟和曹洞兩宗的傳承時,他們的法名都只出自臨濟宗。」

②

聖嚴法師知道自己並無曹洞宗的法名,其實靈源老和尚 的傳法也是同樣狀況,是在臨濟宗的法名中,藉由虛雲老和 尚續演的八十字法「號」,傳承臨濟和曹洞兩宗。

一直到二○○五年九月二日聖嚴法師為十二位法師傳法,並正式提出法鼓宗之後,〈傳法證書〉上的取名又有所改變,那就是將繼程法師的名號從「傳顯見密」,改成「果繼正程」。⑤但是事實上二○○五年聖嚴法師的傳法,繼程

[●] 參見:傅佩芳,〈師父的西方弟子們〉,《法鼓》雜誌,127期,2000 年7月1日,版8。唯,該文將聖嚴法師一九九三年正式傳法的日期, 誤為一九九七年。

⑤ Chan Comes West, p. 25 , Dharma Drum Publications, New York. 2002 ∘

[●] 二○○二年版的 *Chan Comes West* 只介紹了四位法子,少了一位吉伯·古帝亞茲(Gilbert Gutierrez)。而到了二○○五年版的 *Chan Comes West*,則五位西方居士法子都到齊。見:*Chan Comes West*, North Atlantic Books, U.S. 2005/10/31。

[●] 書中又註:本文係聖嚴法師以中文撰寫然後由李世娟菩薩翻譯成英文·章節結尾之註解是譯者徵詢過聖嚴法師之後加上的,*Chan Comes West*, p. 26。引自 Dharma Drum Publications, New York. 2002。

[●] 實際上在二○○五年並無正式的〈傳法證書〉,儀式上只有示範的一紙 代表,這個證書是到了二○○七年才正式排版完成。

法師與居士法子皆未參加,名號改變應是指法鼓宗之後應循 的模式,所以繼程法師與約翰·克魯克在自稱上,都是沿用 「傳法前期」所取的名號。

以下是〈傳法證書〉上的排序,表示四個字的名號之 排序方式。證書上的人員排序是直排版,五位居士法子排在 前,十三位法師法子排在後,這應該是指傳法時間點上的不 同(表八)。

表八:

201			
法鼓宗〈傳法證書〉 聖嚴法師後期傳法(按戒臘、法臘排序)			
法名: 臨濟宗三十二字	法號: 法鼓宗三十二字		
心源廣續 本覺昌隆 能仁聖果 常演寬宏 惟傳法印 正悟會融 堅持戒定 永繼祖宗	道成妙理諦觀真際	萬德圓通 明照長空 達本契同 光徽體洪	
傳燈 傳法 傳宗 傳 傳 轉	淨諦 淨宏 淨 淨 淨 ∌ 倒	(John Crook) (Simon Child) (Max Kalin) (Žarko Andričević) (Gilbert Gutierrez)	
果如 果繼 果敏 果 果 	正湛 正程 正惠 正	(東老代剃) (繼程法師) (惠敏法師) (臺灣弟子) (美國弟子) (共13位)	

早在二○○二年出版的 Chan Comes West 中,聖嚴法師就 有特別的說明,如何使用法「名」與法「號」,他說到:②

四個字是法名的兩部分,應區別開來。

前兩個字組成的是法號。例如,「東初」和「慧空」分別是東初師父和聖嚴法師的法號。

第三和第四個字組成的是法名(相當於姓氏),例如,「鐙朗」和「聖嚴」,分別是東初師父和聖嚴法師的 法名。

傳統上,只有比個人更高位的人,比如他的師父,才會 用法名來稱呼他;而他的門徒和其他人則應該用第一個名 字(法號)來稱呼他。

這意味著,傳統上,命名為「聖嚴法師」,應該是不會 被他的弟子用來稱呼他。只不過,由於這個名字已經被廣 泛認知,所以就繼續使用了。

儘管上面的註解說明,法子名號四個字的排序,是法「號」 在前,法「名」在後。但依〈傳法證書〉如表八所列,卻發 現排序是法「名」在前,法「號」在後。

這就關涉到「稱名者」和「被稱者」的關係。我們可以 根據聖嚴法師上文的指示,對照聖嚴法師得自靈源禪師的傳 法證書:由原來刻鋼板的油印本《校正星燈集》之紀錄內容

❸ 僧侶法子共有十三位,除了表列五位之外,另見註❸。

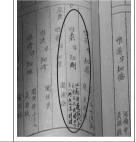
[♦] Chan Comes West, p. 104, Appendix 註 5。引自 Dharma Drum Publications, New York. 2002。(原文為英文敘述,本文在此呈現為譯文)

來看。見表九。 3

表力:

第23代 第24代 盖佳 演徹 諱常勝禪師 字德清 又名 諱常映禪師 性徹、古巖 號虚雲 第 26 代 惟柔 宏妙 字知剛 字靈源 台州傳 聖嚴 佛慧徒 第27代





如《校正星燈集》所見,因為此證書是虚雲和尚所傳, 因此書裡虛雲和尚以下,均為「名在前,號在後」;如: 「第二十四代演徹字德清」、「第二十六代宏妙字靈源」、 第二十七代「惟柔字知剛」。在虚雲和尚以上,則是「號在 前,名在後,;如(二十四代演徹字德清右邊的)第二十三 代「善使諱常勝禪師、光徧諱常映禪師」。諱是名諱的意 思,下輩不敢直稱上輩之名,避諱為敬。從演派訣「常演寬 宏」亦可證明「常勝、常映」為法名,於是知「善使、光 徧 . 為法號。

這就是聖嚴法師在 Chan Comes West 中的提醒。傳法證 書是由高位的師長所傳,師長即直接用法「名」來稱呼他, 而 目 是 依 照 演 派 字 訣 的 排 序 , 魚 貫 地 排 列 下 來 。 但 是 其 他 人,特別是「被稱者」的後輩,則是應該用「字號」來尊 稱他。

也許,如同前所述,華夏禮儀中「避名為敬」的傳統, 現在換成在西方使用,那聖嚴法師在稱呼名號時,倒渦來的 使用,就剛好是適當的,因為在西方對稱呼人名的使用,是 名字在前,姓氏在後。可是,若後人要編輯「中華禪法鼓 宗」燈錄之時,稱謂就應有考究,比如結構依序為:法鼓 (山名)+象岡(道場)+慧空(表字)+聖嚴(內名)禪 師,只是這還是東方的稱呼傳統,如果在西方,如何考量歐 美人士的稱呼習慣,這又是另一個問題。 3

五、平等倫理・創造傳統

法鼓宗〈傳法證書〉的「演派名號」,是依據聖嚴法師

截圖取自法鼓山紀錄片《法源血源》錄影帶中之《校正星燈集》畫面。 (D.D.C. 完成帶之片名為《法脈法源》) 其中第二十四代至第二十七代 的算法,是指在福州鼓山湧泉寺中,高菴圓清禪師為臨濟宗「剃派」第 一代祖師。

❸ 法名法號的取用, Chan Comes West 中載有聖嚴法師所述「由我傳下去 的這個法脈所用的法號將源自臨濟宗,法名則傳自法鼓山系統」(頁 23),並於該書附錄註解14、17詳細說明。唯該記述與說明與法鼓山僧 専現行由聖嚴法師訂頒之〈常住眾法名(內號)・法號(外號)要則〉 有別。相權下,法規文件位階較高,故本論文以〈要則〉為準。

的傳承演派訣以及創製的三十二個字,對傳法予僧、俗法子 有不同的名號與排序,顯示在聖嚴法師思想中,禪法傳承的 平等觀與僧俗倫理觀,為僧俗倫理做了巧妙的安排。同時也 為中華禪法鼓宗的承先與創新密切綰合。

聖嚴法師傳法前期傳法與後期傳法,對法子的取名方式有別。如:繼程法師的名號從「傳顯見密」改成「果繼正程」(上位者對法子的稱呼方式,名在前、號在後);約翰·克魯克名號從「傳燈見諦」改為「傳燈淨諦」。這個調整有三點值得注意:

第一,法號的部分,原是沿用虛雲和尚欲以號派規範字派以融入曹洞法脈續演的八十字(見前三之(一)節):「古佛靈知見……」,現在改以聖嚴法師所製法鼓宗演派三十二字:「正淨智慧 萬德圓通……」。第二,法號的部分,原是出家、在家同一字輩,今則出家僧侶取聖嚴法師所製法鼓宗演派三十二字的首字「正」,在家居士則低一字輩,取第二字「淨」。第三,法名的部分,原來一律承繼自靈源宏妙長老的演派,今則出家僧侶改為承繼自東初仁曙長老的演派,接續「能仁聖果 常演寬宏……」,採「果」字輩。在家居士則仍沿用原承繼自靈源宏妙長老的演派,接續「常演寬宏 惟傳法印」,採「傳」字輩。相隔六個字輩。❸ 從這裡我們觀察到,聖嚴法師對弘傳佛法以及傳法的

熊度:

- 1. 弘傳教法的人,不分僧俗,只要願心強、能力夠, 均有弘化之責,均為禪師/宗教師。此為禪師的平 等觀。
- 2. 弘傳教法的人雖然平等均有弘化之責,但僧俗之責仍 然有別,此為僧俗倫理的考量。
- 3. 創宗立派,將原來臨濟、曹洞分宗的兩脈合而為一, 並依時空發展需要,應機建立新的傳統,此顯示願心 與責任的承擔。

(一)禪師平等觀

傳法予在家居士,此為中華禪法鼓宗傳法十分特殊之 處。這樣的作為,符合世尊眾生平等的精神。但是哪一種平 等呢?

⑤ 靈源長老與東初長老法脈,皆以臨濟宗普陀山前寺系演派訣排輩:「心源廣續,本覺昌隆,能任聖果,常演寬麼,惟傳法印,正悟會融,堅持戒定,永繼祖宗。」東初長老法名仁曙,則為該演派訣第十字輩,靈源長老法名宏妙,屬第十六字輩。

動 社會公正原則依據「貢獻原則」而來。貢獻原則指:社會應按照貢獻分配權利,按權利分配義務。而按貢獻原則對每人的基本權利義務與非基本權利義務進行分配,即是平等。參見:王海明,〈第十八章:社會公正的根本問題〉,《新倫理學》,北京:商務印書館,2008年,頁868-888。

具體原則:政治平等、經濟平等、機會平等。 6

而做為其間判斷的「貢獻」,可以是實際已完成的貢獻,也可以是指潛在的貢獻,即是依據當事人的能力、品德等自身內在的貢獻因素,而不應以運氣、出身等外在貢獻因素考量。因此,在分配權利義務時,都只依據其才能、品德等內在因素,而不考慮個別血緣、性別、宗教、天賦、身分……。

傳法付法,包括之前授權獨立教導禪修,都是一種資格/職務以及權力/權威的分配,從而有隨之而來的權利與義務。聖嚴法師在傳法西方法子時,說明傳法目的與條件云:

三位居士,不僅跟隨師父修行多年,有深厚的修行經驗,最重要的是具有三項特質:第一、具備佛法的正知見,第二、個性非常穩定,第三、均發下菩薩誓願,具有弘法的熱情。亦均已開始在不同的國度推廣師父的禪法。❸

判斷的標準純然都是依據其品德、才能♥,而並未以

現出家相為必要條件。法師多年觀察而判斷,美國青年終身出家不易,⑩而佛法之弘揚亟需在地人才。因此,對在家居士開放,特別是對佛法罕至之處如英國、瑞士、克羅埃西亞·····。而法師如此做法亦非全無來歷,依《瑜伽師地論》,欲受菩薩戒者,若在千里無師時,是允許在佛前自誓受戒的。⑪因此,在千里無三寶所,有禪師得以弘揚禪法,亦應開許。這開許的考量,就在背後有一更高的價值做判準:對佛法流傳濟度眾生的悲心與信心。

(二)僧俗倫理

傳法居士,重視的是實質對見地的把握,以及對弘揚 教法的願心。兩者同樣重要,但是否已有見性入處為優先比 序。這個標準,在二〇〇五年傳法大典時,有所調整。

聖嚴法師於該傳法典禮開示強調,此次為「任務型傳法」,並明確提出傳法的標準有三,云:

這次的傳法,我們立出三個條件,第一是已從心法獲得 入處,也就是禪宗講的明心見性,不過有這樣經驗的人,

③ 〈象岡禪 49 開創默照禪新生命〉,《法鼓》雜誌,127 期,2000 年 7 月 15 日,版 1。

^{● 「}才能、品德」可總括為「已得入處」之見地,以及弘揚禪法之願心。 如二○○五年傳法大典開示所舉三項標準之第一項。見後五之(二) 節。

^{● 《}金山有鑛》:「這兩位青年,資質都很優秀,雖然費了我不少心血,但這也是我要在美國留下來的主因之一。縱然以現代美國人的性格和心向,註定了難以終身出家,他們在三年及兩年之後,相繼還了俗結了婚,但我所投注的心力卻並未落空。」《法鼓全集》6-4,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年,頁205。

[●] 參見:釋聖嚴,〈第五章 菩薩戒的秉受方法〉,《戒律學綱要》,《法 鼓全集》1-3,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年,頁389。

並不一定適合傳法,像是被我印證過見性的人,臺灣、美國都有,但我並沒有傳法給他們,因為他們還沒有弘揚佛法的悲願和能力,這個條件是非常重要的。

第二個是接受付囑主持正法、弘揚正法、傳持正法、續 佛慧命,並具有維護和開展法鼓山禪法能力的人。

第三是已有獨立一方、弘揚法鼓山禪法的能力,而且已 經有了道場。具備這三種之一。**②**

接法的十二位法子, 包括了當時擔任各單位主官主管等, 重要職務之出家弟子,而且條件為「具備這三種之一」,並 不像西方法子以「已得入處」為必要條件。這個標準的調整 以及法號演派字輩的調整,見出聖嚴法師對僧俗倫理的安 立;或者更精確地說,是對「宗教師團體/僧團」和「宗教 師個人」的倫理規範。

佛教教團,原與佛教僧團為同一內涵, ◎ 指的是具備

僧侶身分者的團體,而為住持佛教的代表。而後僧侶住持佛教、修行佛法、傳揚佛法……等多重身分與角色的某些功能漸漸釋放,教團的外延也因此逐漸擴大,從佛教的修學者、佛教的信仰者……,而至將佛弟子總體全包括進來是最大外延。而僧侶角色及隨之而來的經典閱讀(如:居士不得讀律)、經典詮釋、禪修參與……等權利/力,亦漸釋放。但直至近代,做為佛教重心住持佛教的宗教師,⑤始終保留在僧侶而未有替代。因此,雖然傳法給居士,但對居士法子的角色與身分便須加以定位,以免「治一經、損一經」形成倫理失範帶來困擾。

居士接受傳法,表示其宗教師的身分被認可,但只意味教授禪法的身分,而非住持佛教的身分。尤其是,居士法子所在區域,主要在歐美地區個別弘化,並未具備教團規模。此所以二〇〇五年傳法時,並非如傳法居士「已得入處」為必要條件;因為僧侶法子要承擔教團經營的責任。

至於居士而法號低一字輩,這樣的以僧俗身分而安立的 倫理,分位看似為「不平等」的舉措,但從倫理學公正平等 原則的討論來看,則仍是符合平等公義原則的。因為社會公 正原則依據「貢獻原則」:「社會應按照貢獻分配權利,按

[●] 釋聖嚴,〈傳法大典開示:交付傳持佛法的任務〉,《法鼓》雜誌,190
期,2005年10月1日,版1。

❸ 十二位法子包括:僧團首座及中華佛研所學術副所長惠敏法師、禪堂板首及玉佛寺住持果如法師、僧團副住持果暉法師、禪堂板首果元法師、禪修副都監果醒法師、都監果品法師、男眾部副都監果東法師、美國象岡道場負責人果峻法師等,八位男眾;以及僧伽大學副院長果鏡法師、執行副都監果廣法師、中華佛研所行政副所長果肇法師、文化副都監果毅法師等,四位女眾。見:《法鼓》雜誌,190期,2005年10月1日,版1。

[●] 平川彰指出:「佛教的教團稱為僧伽。廣義上雖四部眾也可以稱作僧伽,但是由原始佛教時代的慣用語來看,組織僧伽的只有出家眾而已;亦即集合比丘組織成「比丘僧伽」(bhikkhu samgha), 比丘尼組織成「比丘尼僧伽」(bhikkhuni samgha),兩者合稱

[「]兩僧伽」(二部僧)。……並不將四部眾合在一起稱作僧伽。」「四眾」(cattari parisadani),包括比丘、比丘尼、優婆塞、優婆夷,是指佛的四眾弟子,為佛弟子的總稱。見氏著,莊崑木譯,《印度佛教史》,臺北:商周出版社,2002年,頁71-73。

⑤ 聖嚴法師指出:宗教的功能是屬於信仰的層次,生活上的困難、生命中的問題,皆可從宗教功能來處理。因此「佛教的出家眾就是佛教的宗教師。」(同註●,頁 23-24)。

權利分配義務。」符合此原則此即是平等。貢獻可分為實在 貢獻與潛在貢獻,後者指尚未做出但行將做出的貢獻。❸ 因此,對佛陀「建僧目的」❺的全然承擔,即為「潛在貢 獻」,僧侶的特權來自於此,也因而是符合平等公義原則。

只是,這樣的倫理規範仍然是相對而非絕對的。出家僧 侶住持佛教的角色,能否維持的核心元素「須視出家僧團弘 法力量的強弱,以及人才人數之多寡而決定。」聖嚴法師指 出:「如果僧中無人才,無能領導四眾的弟子,則中國佛教 轉為以在家居士為中心的時日不會太遠。」◎

(三) 創造新的傳統

法鼓宗立宗,禪法核心是將復興了的曹洞默照與臨濟話 頭合流,也融入了當代世界各系佛教禪法,❷ 這是內容的創

- 6 同註6, 頁 875-879。
- 印順導師說明佛陀建僧目的的第一義,在住持佛法。「住持」,應特別注意佛法本質的保持。而為住持佛法,佛弟子要有組織的集團,才能使佛法久住世間。僧團的組合,世尊是把他建築在律制的基礎上;以嚴格的紀律,成為攝受僧眾的向心力。(見氏著,《佛法概論》,頁18-19)
- 釋聖嚴,〈以出家僧為佛教重心的傳統能繼續維持嗎?〉,《學佛群疑》,《法鼓全集》5-3,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年,頁241。
- ② 聖嚴法師:「我們是承繼中國大陸的禪宗,但已不是十九世紀中國大陸那樣的禪宗,那時的中國禪宗,是山林式的,尚沒有接觸到南傳及藏傳佛教的優良面及實用面,但是我接觸到了。同時我也接觸到了韓國、日本、乃至越南的禪佛教。……還有,默照禪,在中國已經傳失八百多年,但是,我在日本曹洞宗的禪堂看到,我也參加了他們稱為「只管打坐」的修行,實則便是默照禪的別名。我到美國後也接觸到南傳的內觀禪。我把它們分析整合起來,便是法鼓山所傳的中華禪法。」又,話頭與默照的法門亦有不同,法師「把話頭及默照禪整理之後,在頓中

新。將弘傳責任交付僧侶,也交付居士,這是傳法對象的創新。從演派訣將曹洞臨濟合流、剃派法派合流、僧俗合流; 這都屬形式層面的創新,而形式方面更重大意義的創新則是 對「宗派」性質的不同定義。

傳統宗派的思維來自宗法與正統思想。宗法的作用在「管攝天下人心,收宗族、厚風俗,使人不忘本。」(張載語),正統的目的則在明正閏、分嫡庶,甚至辨華夷。 ▼兩者共通的精神在,從親疏遠近來確認傳承的合法性。正宗指的是大宗、宗子,正宗即正統,傳承依此即為合法,否則即為僭偽。

這種只重形式且帶有排他性思維的法派思想,引起有識者的反對聲音。如蕅益智旭云:

今之爭師資授受者,譬諸世主,身苟無道,天子不若匹夫,桀紂是也。今之雖有師承,顛覆如來教戒者,何以異此。苟得其道,匹夫竟開大統,漢高明太是也。今之雖乏師承,能自契合佛祖心印者,亦奚不然。**②**

開出次第化的漸修法門,是任何根器的人都適合用來起信實修的好方法。」同註**②**,頁 9-10。

- 陳芳明指出,正統論由兩種觀念發展組成,一是「水平線的正統觀」,就是同一時空只有一個正統,其餘的都是閏位、僭偽;二是「垂直線的正統觀」,指前後相承之統治地位來自一脈相傳的正統源流,捨此無他。參見氏著,〈宋代正統論的形成背景及其內容〉,杜維運、黃進興編,《中國史學史論文選集一》,頁378。
- **①** 釋智旭,〈儒釋宗傳竊議〉,《靈峰宗論》第 5-3 卷,美國佛教會電腦資訊 庫功德會,網址:www.baus-ebs.org/sutra/fan-read/010/016-018/05-3.htm。

聖嚴法師對此自亦了解,因為「為了爭執法派的旁嫡,可能 自我尊大而蔑視其他,將自以為不是正統主流之內的人,一 律視作歧出的旁派。」❷

宗派傳承的好處是,「師師相承,心心相印,是可以防止 『承虛接響』的偽妄之徒,假佛法之名,行魔業之實。」❸ 靠著「自知、自覺、自作證」,在自修自學的時候,問題還 小。到了弘化度他時,如果不依賴傳承,「自契佛祖心印」 怎麼來認定?會不會「佛菩薩滿街走」?❸

法師當初不重視宗派,是對實質實力的肯認而忽略形式;後來重視傳承,則是取信於人的方便而需要形式。兩難之間,需要取捨,更需要創新。因此在立宗同時,便考量如何避免宗派可能產生的流弊。

如何調節其間的兩難?法師一方面要降低宗派法子的「排他性」;另外,則說明「傳法/付法」的儀式不是取得 合法性的唯一來源。

合法性的確保自然是需要的,這是宗派/傳法的根本目的。傳法,是宗教師身分的認可,代表對法子的授權。而此同時,也是對慕名而來學習者的品質承諾與保證。這相當於

現代企業的「品牌」意識,也相當於現代社會的智慧財產觀念;兩者都是對消費者負責任的承擔。但在確保合法性時,如何降低「排他性」呢?這不來自制度層面的設計,而來自對受法者的教育。法師對接受傳法者,有四項勉勵,其中第三、第四點云:

負有傳承任務的人,應該會感到喜悅,但絕不應該覺得 驕傲;應該會感到快樂,但絕不應該覺得自滿。常常提起 你慣用的方法,時時要謹慎你平常的言行。因此你是獲益 最多,進步最快的人。

至於老師與弟子之間的關係,我的老師東初老和尚曾經告知我:「三分師徒,七分道友」,意思是互為增上助緣的善知識。弟子禮敬老師,是為感恩從老師得到了法的利益,老師尊重弟子,是為感激由弟子把佛法傳承了下去。 老師並不具有絕對的權威,對於弟子而言,老師扮演的角色,是技術指導的諮詢顧問,是證明修行程度的公證人;彼此之間,是教授佛法與學習佛法的關係結合,弟子

高傲我慢,是形成「排他」意識的重要元素。因此法師勉勵 法子不應自滿自傲,再則從身教來教導降低威權心態。

是向老師學習正確的佛法,不是要學老師這個人。₺

二〇〇五年法鼓山舉行傳法大典,法師開示,請大家不

❷ 釋聖嚴,〈明末禪者的法派諍議〉,《明末佛教研究》,《法鼓全集》1-1,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年,頁57。

³ 同上。

型 聖嚴法師於〈我的修行與傳承〉就提到,僅僅標榜「自知、自覺、自作證」,那是會有危險的,很可能天下人都以為已經自知成佛,已經自覺成佛,已經證明自己成了佛了。〈我的修行與傳承(五)〉,《法鼓》雜誌 143 期,2001 年 11 月 1 日,版 5。

聖嚴法師: 〈我的修行與傳承(六)〉,《法鼓》雜誌,144期,2001
年 12 月 1 日,版 5。

要以為只有這十二位才是法子,並舉禪宗大德石頭希遷、青原行思、南嶽懷讓等,都不在惠能大師十位傳法弟子之列為例,然後鼓勵大眾,期望均能擔當重責,他說:

釋迦牟尼佛說過,只要我們運用佛法、傳持佛法、弘揚佛法、修持佛法,擔當任務之後就是法子。所以,法子和一般弟子其實並沒有什麼不同,法子有的是任務的交代。因此,其他人雖然還沒接受傳法,但我希望每個人都能擔起傳持佛法的重責大任,有沒有傳法的儀式不是重點;而在家居士只要接受這樣的任務,達成這樣的標準,一樣也是法子。

傳法儀式是形式,屬「事和」;鼓勵大眾努力學習,成為接受傳法的法子,則是從「理和」來取得傳法的合法性。所不同者,當日接受傳法者是事和理和的統一,未來達成標準成為法子,則事理尚未統一,但已開許其他合法性的可能了。

六、結語:宗教師的時代意義

禪門法脈流傳甚久,在歷史演派中摻雜了各式各樣的文 化成分。而近代叢林特別重視的「剃派」、「法派」之分, 也因歷史環境的變動,而漸漸失去必須嚴格區分的作用。此 在虚雲老和尚傳法靈源法師時已可見出,虚雲老和尚傳法靈 源法師,交付了《星燈集》,但並沒有另外交付臨濟宗龍池 幻有系「法派」的名號,而仍延用原來「剃派」的法名法號「靈源宏妙」。此或是由於時暨亂世不得已而然,而更有可能是虛雲和尚有意識地如此作為。因為鼓山的「法派」傳承原即是臨濟、曹洞並傳,經虛雲老和尚重新規範演派名號後,臨濟宗的「剃派」也就包含了「法派」的性質(見三之(二)節)。

聖嚴法師承繼曹洞、臨濟法脈,然其源自東初長老之法 名、源自靈源長老之法名,俱為臨濟而非曹洞譜系。此則是 由於「剃派與法派的交錯」(見三之(三)節),同時也是 時代環境變化所致,東初長老所謂「人不在焦山」之緣故。 然於傳承之形式,畢竟終須面對。因此,為了處理曹洞、臨 濟法脈複雜的傳承系譜,也為了呈現法鼓山禪修教學與前代 之不同,於是創立法鼓宗,也因此有演派訣的製作,以示對 前傳有所承接繼續,對後傳有所開啟創新。而他多年國際弘 化的經驗,於是以面對世界、迎向未來的發展,因應時代地 域需求而傳法給居士,授予其獨立教授禪法、弘揚漢傳禪佛 教的資格。

宗派,如果類比於企業的品牌;則宗派建立相當於品牌 建立,而宗派的經營則是品牌的營運。品牌與產品不同。品 牌的建立是組織所有人、所有產品長時間的品質承諾架構而 成;而品牌價值的維持與延伸,則需要投入比建立階段更細 緻更廣泛的營運。在現代社會,自創品牌與建立宗派都是一 種責任與承擔,也都需要投入更龐大的心力人力來經營。因 此,擴大參與,善用人才,決定了品牌與宗派的未來。

[●] 釋聖嚴,〈傳法大典開示:交付傳持佛法的任務〉,《法鼓》雜誌,190
期,2005年10月1日,版1。

探索聖嚴法師傳法予居士的「演派名號」·273·

聖嚴法師創建法鼓宗,相當於品牌的建立;傳法給居士以分擔僧侶部分宗教師的角色功能,相當於對品牌經營,展示了人力人才運用的策略。佛教的未來須要僧俗事和、理和相互支持,創造性地找出多角色的合作模態,以因應多元社會的變局。法師在宗派建立以及後續經營,都為新時代的宗教師開啟了重大的時代意義。

附錄

聖嚴法師從一九九三年至二〇〇二年的十年間,共傳法 予五位居士,交付弘傳中華禪法鼓宗的任務,其名籍等具列 如下表:

國籍	姓名	職業	傳法時間	名號
英國	John H. Crook (約翰・克魯克)	教授	1993.6.4	傳燈見諦
英國	Simon Child (賽門・查爾德)	醫師	2000.12.1	傳法淨宏
瑞士	Max Kalin (麥克斯・卡林)	醫師	2000.12.1	傳宗淨禪
克羅埃西亞	Žarko Andričević (查可·安德列塞維克)	武術教師	2001.6.2	傳心淨慧
美國	Gilbert Gutierrez (吉伯・古帝亞茲)	律師	2002.12.5	傳慧淨劍

參考文獻

一、佛典文獻

《憨山老人夢遊集》第 20 卷,CBETA, X73, No. 1456。 《宗教律諸宗演派》,CBETA, X88, No. 1667。

二、古籍文獻

宋·張載,《張載集》,臺北:里仁書局,1981年。

明·釋智旭,〈儒釋宗傳竊議〉,《靈峰宗論》第 5-3 卷,美國佛教會電腦資訊庫功德會。http://www.baus-ebs.org/sutra/fan-read/010/016-018/05-3.htm。

《禪門日誦》,四川:成都文殊院,1995年。

三、現代文獻

- 〈人名規範資料庫〉,《佛學規範資料庫》,Buddhist Studies Authority Database Project,http://authority.ddbc.edu.tw/person/。
- 〈本刊職員名錄〉,《學僧天地》創刊號,上海:靜安佛教學院, 1948年1月1日。
- 〈象岡禪 49 開創默照禪新生命〉,《法鼓》雜誌,127 期,2000 年7月15日,版1。
- 《法脈法源》紀錄片,介紹法鼓山聖嚴法師傳承禪宗法脈,脈脈相傳之歷史淵流,法鼓山體系內部簡介用,1999年出版,片長 15 分鐘。
- 王海明,《新倫理學》,北京:商務印書館,2008年。
- 平川彰著,莊崑木譯,《印度佛教史》,臺北:商周出版社,2002 年。

- 汪娟、黃青萍,〈唐宋禪師名號之發展及其用例〉,《禪學研究》 第九輯,南京: 江蘇人民出版社,2011年,頁77-95。
- 汪娟、黃青萍,《明清燈錄中有關名號與法嗣的問題》,佛光山人間佛教研究院等主辦,「宗教實踐與文學創作暨《中國宗教文學史》編纂國際學術研討會」,2014年1月10-14日。
- 周裕鍇,〈略談唐宋僧人的法名與表字〉,《佛學研究中心學報》,第9期,2004年7月,頁119-126。
- 林其賢,〈聖嚴法師之名號與法脈〉,《國立屏東商業技術學院院報》,第2期,2000年6月,頁215-221。
- 林其賢,《聖嚴法師七十年譜》,臺北:法鼓文化,2000年。
- 張雪松,〈晚明以來僧人名號及譜系研究〉,《玄奘佛學研究》, 第15期,2011年3月,頁264。
- 陳芳明,〈宋代正統論的形成背景及其內容〉,杜維運,黃進興編 《中國史學史論文選集一》,臺北:華世出版社,1976年。
- 陳錫璋編撰,《福州鼓山湧泉寺歷代住持禪師傳略》,臺南:智者 出版社,1996年。
- 傅佩芳,〈師父的西方弟子們〉,《法鼓》雜誌,127期,2000年 7月1日,版8。
- 黃青萍、汪娟,〈唐宋禪師三字名號之研究—兼論詩僧名號的使用〉,政治大學中文學系主辦,「第四屆東亞宗教文獻國際學術研討會」,2014年3月15-16日。
- 錢大昕,《十駕齋養新錄》,臺北:廣文書局,1968年1月影刻版。
- 釋印順,《佛法概論》,新竹:正聞出版社,1989年。
- 釋果徹,〈東初老人簡譜〉,《中華佛學研究》,第2期,臺北: 中華佛學研究所,1998年,頁1。
- 釋茗山主編,《焦山志》,北京:方志出版社,1999年。
- 釋淨慧,〈虛雲和尚行業記——紀念虛雲和尚圓寂三十周年〉。

- http://read.goodweb.cn/news/news_view.asp?newsid=6108 °
- 釋淨慧主編,《虛雲和尚全集》第2冊,《書信·文記》,鄭州: 中州古籍出版社,2009年。
- 釋淨慧主編,《虛雲和尚全集》第3冊,《詩偈》,鄭州:中州古 籍出版社,2009年。
- 釋淨慧主編,《虛雲和尚全集》第5冊,《年譜》,鄭州:中州古 籍出版社,2009年。
- 釋淨慧主編,《虛雲和尚全集》第7冊,《追思錄》,鄭州:中州 古籍出版社,2009年。
- 釋聖嚴, 〈我的修行與傳承〉, 《法鼓》雜誌, 139-144 期, 2001 年 7-12 月。
- 釋聖嚴, 〈常住眾法名(內號), 法號(外號)要則〉, 法鼓山僧 團內部公告, 2004年1月29日。
- 釋聖嚴,〈傳法大典開示:交付傳持佛法的任務〉,《法鼓》雜誌,190期,2005年10月1日,版1。
- 釋聖嚴,《承先啟後的中華禪法鼓宗》,臺北:聖嚴教育基金會, 2006年10月。
- Chan Comes West, Dharma Drum Publications, New York, 2002 °
- Chan Comes West, North Atlantic Books, U.S. 2005 °

三、《法鼓全集》

- 釋聖嚴,《明末佛教研究》,《法鼓全集》1-1,臺北:法鼓文化, 1999 年。
- 釋聖嚴,《戒律學綱要》,《法鼓全集》1-3,臺北:法鼓文化, 1999年。
- 釋聖嚴,《神通與人通》,《法鼓全集》3-2,臺北:法鼓文化, 1999年。
- 釋聖嚴,《禪門修證指要》,《法鼓全集》4-1,臺北:法鼓文化,

1999年。

- 釋聖嚴,《正信的佛教》,《法鼓全集》5-2,臺北:法鼓文化, 1999年。
- 釋聖嚴,《學佛群疑》,《法鼓全集》5-3,臺北:法鼓文化,1999 年。
- 釋聖嚴,《歸程》,《法鼓全集》6-1,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年。
- 釋聖嚴,《法源血源》,《法鼓全集》6-2,臺北:法鼓文化,1999 年。
- 釋聖嚴,《金山有鑛》,《法鼓全集》6-4,臺北:法鼓文化,1999
- 釋聖嚴,《火宅清涼》,《法鼓全集》6-5,臺北:法鼓文化,1999 年。
- 釋聖嚴,《行雲流水》,《法鼓全集》6-8,臺北:法鼓文化,1999 年。

Exploring the System of "Dharma Name" for the Lineage Transmission to Lay People by Master Sheng Yen:

The Gushan line of Linji Lineage

Guo Shing Shi

Lecturer, Sheng Yen Academy

Dr. Chih Hsien Lin

Associate Professor, National Pintung University

Abstract

This paper traces back the full particulars of the Dharma name system for the sangha members from the history, excavates the lineage tradition in the family tree like naming system in order to clarify the complete "Dharma name system" in the contemporary Gushan line of the Linji Lineage, and to explore the background for establishment of the Dharma Drum Lineage of Chinese Chan Buddhism. Furthermore, this enables us to clearly understand the characteristics of Master Sheng Yen idea about the lineage transmission to lay people as well as the significance of the transmission of Dharma Drum lineage nowadays.

Master Sheng Yen carries the dharma transmission from two main lineages of Chan tradition, the Jiaosan line of the Caodong lineage and the Gushan line of the Linji lineage. Instead of following the traditional naming lineage in the Chan tradition, the Master established the Dharma Drum lineage of Chinese Chan Buddhism, in year 2005, for the transmission to his Dharma heirs, including both sangha members and lay disciples. What is the connection between the Dharma name used in the transmission of

Dharma Drum lineage and the Linji lineage as well as Caodong lineage? What is the influence of these two lineages, as to the Dharma name system, onto the newly established Dharma Drum lineage? These are the main topics to be discussed in this paper.

The transmission to lay people is a special feature of the Dharma Drum lineage. That is for the propagation of Chan practice globally. Most of the Dharma heirs of Master Sheng Yen in the West are lay people. Also, the first profound Chan experience of Master Sheng Yen was inspired by Master Ling Yuan when he was a lay person. Master Sheng Yen mentioned about the sudden enlightenment experiences of lay people in several articles. It implies his positive attitude towards dharma transmission to lay people. Therefore, how to set appropriate arrangements for sangha members and lay people when transmitting the Dharma lineage? This issue will be clarified in this article.

The Dharma naming system on the Certificate of Transmission in the Dharma Drum lineage is based on a verse of 32 characters, which was composed by Master Sheng Yen. The system assigns different Dharma names and orders to Dharma heirs as a sangha member or lay person. This reveals the delicate consideration of Master Sheng Yen for the equality and ethics on the transmission of Chan lineage to these two groups. Meanwhile, it closely matches the inheritance of the past with the development into the future.

Key words: Master Sheng Yen, Gushan line of the Linji Lineage, Dharma Drum Lineage of Chinese Chan Buddhism, Certificate of Transmission, Dharma name system for the transmission, Lay dharma heirs

數數念佛禪法之研究 ——以聖嚴法師的教學為主

釋果鏡

中華佛學研究所所長 法鼓文理學院副教授暨禪文化研修中心主任

摘要

在聖嚴法師的禪法教學上有一種「數數念佛法」,經常被使用來對治「數息變成控制呼吸」或者「隨息變成昏沉散亂」之禪法,而此種「數數念佛法」是生於清末民初的高僧印光所提倡的「十念記數法」相似,印光因為體驗到「心難制伏」,嘗試使用此種方法後,方才識得其中妙用。今以「數數念佛法」為本論的研究核心,嘗試以種種面向來探討之。

筆者首先探討「數」之概念的起源,「數」在中國及印度文化中之涵義?又「數」在數字及計數之意涵?嘗試爬梳出「數數」含有「相續流轉」、「一即十」、「空」、「智慧」等力量,能把阿賴耶識所變現的「數識」,轉成大圓鏡智,最後達到見性成佛之目的。

再進一步探究聖嚴把「數數」加上「念佛」稱為「數數念佛」,其中的修行原理及實踐方法。並從禪宗五祖弘忍門下之「宣什宗」,所提倡過之念佛法,來深入探討其念佛是否與「數數念佛」有其淵源?「數數念佛」與傳統念佛法不同之處為何?並且以遵式、印光、聖嚴三位高僧所提倡的

· 280 · 聖嚴研究

「數數念佛」方法,來比對其間之異同?最後探討聖嚴如何 在教授「話頭禪」與「默照禪」時,運用「數數念佛」來達 成「參禪」與「默照」之目的?其中連結之原理理論與基礎 實踐為何?

筆者撰寫本論,期望能深入探討「數數念佛」禪法之外,更期望能開展「念佛即參禪」、「念佛即默照」的新 祖角。

關鍵詞: 聖嚴法師、數數、數數念佛、話頭禪、默照禪

數數念佛禪法之研究 · 281 ·

一、前言

「數數念佛」禪法是聖嚴法師(以下敬稱省略)三十幾 年來,在世界各地教授禪法與主持禪七時,所使用的禪修方 法之一種。一九九四年聖嚴在美國主持禪七時開示說:

禪修的方法略有四種:一隨息、數息;二念佛、數佛號;三參話頭、參公案;四只管打坐、默照禪。**●**

其中的禪修方法就有「數佛號」也就是「數數念佛」, 有時候也稱「念佛數數」②。「數數」的作用為何?「數 數念佛」是否是禪法?又此種「數數念佛」禪法是否有其傳 承?或者是聖嚴所創新?如果有傳承,傳承的內涵是什麼? 如果有創新,創新的依據是什麼?又是否可以進入「念佛是 誰」的話頭禪?是否可以直入「只管打坐」的默照禪?其中 進入、直入的原理理論及實踐基礎為何?筆者試圖圍繞以上 種種問題意識來探討研究之。

二、何謂「數數念佛」?

探討「數數念佛」此項議題之前,筆者首先擬探究「數」

[■] 釋聖嚴,《禪鑰》,《法鼓全集》4-10,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年,頁 86-92。

[●] 釋聖嚴,《聖嚴法師教禪坐》,《法鼓全集》4-9,臺北:法鼓文化, 1999年,頁24。

之概念的起源,再分論「數數」在中國及印度經典中之解釋為何?其次細論聖嚴所教授的「數數念佛」之內容及方法。

(一)「數」之概念的起源

依據《數之意義》一書中:

數為一抽象之概念,而人類思想,率皆由具體問題發生,必經悠久之嬗遞變遷,方可逐漸完成此概念之內容。 但人類歷史之有記載,比較上為時甚短,殆不足據以確定 數之概念之所自。③

「數」是一種抽象的概念,無法確定它是起於何時?但 可以確定是經過了相當長時間的變遷而成。此書又云:

吾人今日所能考察者,僅為文字之起源,原始社會中民 族之情況,與高等生物之行為,初民對於數之認識,就此 等間接材料,差可蠡測其一二焉。◆

最初人類對數之認識,目前只能從探討文字的起源之相關材料中,獲得一些資訊。又由於生活與勞動上的需求,即 使是最原始的民族,也知道簡單的計數,並由用手指或實物 計數發展到用數字計數。 ⑤ 又《數之意義》中云:

計數含有一種較精細之心理程序,必文化已達相當程度之民族,始具此能力,原始民族,則僅有數之感覺。…… 所謂數之感覺,乃指在一小組之物體中,潛移去或加入之物時,即能察覺其間已有變化之一種能力。⑥

計數是一種精細的心理程序,是屬於較高文化才具有的能力。人類最早記數靠堆積石塊、木棍或擺弄手指、腳趾,後來使用結繩和契刻。又隨著記載數目的增大,出現了進位制,因為受到各地自然環境與各種社會條件的影響,所以產生出不同的記數法,例如:巴比倫、古埃及、中國古代、古希臘、古羅馬、古印度,都有自己的記數法。②其中以印度記數法獨稱完備,係因宗教上「大數」之應用特多,例如佛教經典之中記載「大數」就有十種:阿僧祇、無量、無邊、無等、不可數、不可稱、不可思、不可量、不可說、不可說不可說;③其中阿僧祇是梵語 asamkhya 之音譯,意譯為不可算計,或無量數、無央數,至於發明之時代,已無從稽考,被推測大約距今千三百年以前,其法已經完備可用。②

³ 余介石·倪可權著,《數之意義》,臺北:臺灣商務印書館,2005年, 頁1。

⁴ 同上。

⁶ 《中國大百科全書》,《數學》,臺北:錦繡出版,1995年,頁1。

⁶ 同註3。

⑦ 同註**⑤**,頁 356-357。

^{● 《}大正新脩大藏經》第35冊,《大方廣佛華嚴經搜玄分齊通智方軌》, 第1732經,頁75下1-6。

回計3,頁5。

(二)「數數」在中國古文之音義

「數」一字在發音上有多種:1. 朔裕切,音樹 Shuh 去聲;2. 所五切,音蜀 Shuu 上聲;3. 疏渥切,音朔 Shuoh 本入聲;4. 趨旭切,音促 Tsuh 本入聲;5. 蘇谷切,音速 Suh 本入聲。其義上除了「計」之外更有多種,依據東漢·許慎(約58-147)著,清·段玉裁(1735-1815)注《說文解字》「數」下注:

引伸之義,分析之音甚多,大約速與密二義可包之。圖

「數」還有「速」與「密」二義。「速」乃促迫、迅速 之意,例如:《史記·屈原賈生列傳》:

淹數之度兮。 4

又有煩之意,例如:《禮記·樂記》:

衛音趨數煩志。IS

「密」乃細密之意,例如:《孟子·梁惠王》:

數罟入洿池,魚鳖不可勝食也。₺

又小篆「數」以婁本作「空」解,因為計算須心中別無雜念,方能專心致志為之,所以數从婁聲。❻「婁」字乃「从母从中女」,依清,段玉裁注:

按从母猶从無也,無者空也。从中女謂離卦離中,虚 也,皆會意也。®

^{● 《}正中形音義綜合大字典》,臺北:正中書局,1974年,頁632。

[●] 同計6, 頁 356。

② 《中文大辭典》,臺北:中華學術院,1973年,頁178。

[●] 東漢·許慎著,清·段玉裁注,《說文解字》,臺北:萬卷樓圖書, 2002年8月,頁124上。

[●] 韓兆琦注譯,《新譯史記》,臺北:三民書局,2008年,頁3486、3492。

⑤ 葉衡選注,《禮記》,臺北:臺灣商務印書館,1964年,頁104。

❸ 楊伯峻譯注,《孟子譯注》,北京:中華書局,1960年,頁5。

⑰ 同註**⑩**,頁632。

❸ 同註❸,頁630下。

因此「婁」有「空」之意也。所以在計算之時,必須要 有專注心,放下一切,心無雜物,達到心中無念,有如進入 虚空之中,才能計算得準確無誤、清楚分明。

另外,「數」亦有「運命」之意,例如《江淹·雜體 詩》〈劉太尉琨傷亂〉:

治亂惟冥數。◎

又有「曆法、曆術」之意,例如《淮南子·氾論訓》:

室之執數者也。20

又有「筮法、卜筮、術數」之意,例如《史記·日 者傳》:

試之卜數。21

「數數」一詞在中國古代,音疏渥切,音朔アメで Shuoh 本入聲,屬副詞乃頻繁之意,例如:《三國志·蜀 志,先主傳》: 曹公使夏侯淵張郃屯漢中,數數犯暴巴界。20

又有急迫,勉勉強強之意。例如:《列子·皇帝》:

今東方介氏之國,其國人數數解六畜之語者。23

另一音蘇谷切,音速ムメ Suh 本入聲,屬形容詞乃促迫之意。例如:《莊子·逍遙遊》:

彼其於世,未數數然也。20

總之,「數」在中國古文的意涵有「計算」、「促 迫」、「迅速」、「細密」、「空」、「運命」、「曆 法」、「筮法」等,「數數」有「頻繁」、「促迫」、「勉 勉強強」等意義。

(三)「數數」在佛典中之意

「數」梵語 samkhya,依據彌勒菩薩說,唐·玄奘(602?-664)譯《瑜伽師地論》卷五十二:

[●] 高海夫、金性堯主編,《古詩漢魏六朝新賞13》,臺北:地球出版, 1993年,頁22。

[●] 張雙棣撰,《淮南子校釋下》,北京:北京大學出版,1997年,頁 1412、1414。

⁴ 同註**6**, 頁 4987、4991。

蘇淵雷主編,劉周堂注譯,《三國志今注今譯》,臺北:建安出版, 1996年,頁1540。

❸ 嚴捷、嚴北溟注,《列子譯注》,臺北:仰哲出版,1987年,頁47、 49。

郭慶籓撰,《莊子集釋》,北京:中華書局,1961年,頁17-19。

云何數?謂安立顯示各別事物,計算數量差別,是名為 數。**3**

表示計算數量之意。古印度在西元前二千五百年左右 出現一種稱為哈拉巴數碼的銘文記數法,到了西元前後通行 起兩種數碼:卡羅什奇數碼和婆羅門數碼。到了西元五世紀 後,印度數碼中零的符號日益明確,使記數逐漸發展成十進 位值制。 ② 又唐·玄奘譯《顯揚聖教論》卷一:

數者,謂諸行等,各別相續體相流轉性。49

「數」具有相續流轉性之意。又安慧菩薩糅,唐·玄奘 譯《大乘阿毗達磨雜集論》卷二:

數者,謂於諸行一一差別,假立為數。一一差別者,於 一無別,二三等數,不應理故。❷

說明一與二三等數無差別,一以外皆是方便假立的數, 所有的差別數,最後都將歸於一,一即多之意。又依據唐, 惠沼(生平不詳)《成唯識論了義燈》卷二解釋:

有云《涅槃經》云:「上古有仙,名闍提首那。彼仙造論,名三彌叉。」此云觀察,廣明二十五諦。准此觀察,即是智惠,與數論名同。數是智惠故,即是本論。❷

「數」又可有「智慧」之意。五百大羅漢等造,唐·玄 奘譯《阿毗達磨大毗婆沙論》卷一百二十六云:

數名何法?答:「如理轉變意業,及此所依諸巧便智。」此中數者,非謂所數稻麻等物百千等數。但是所有能數之法,此能數法故說為數。⑩

此論中之「數」不是所數之物,而是如理轉變意業成善 巧智慧之能數。總言之,「數」有計算數量、相續流轉、一 即多、智慧等之意。

「數數」梵語 abhīkṣṇa,意譯為附加、反覆或者實行、 修習、研究等。例如:《瑜伽師地論》卷二十八:

云何數數觀察?謂依尸羅數數觀察惡作不作,數數觀察 善作而作。於其惡作不作不轉;於其善作作而不退;於其

⑤ 《大正新脩大藏經》第 30 冊,《瑜伽師地論》,第 1579 經,頁 588 下 5-6。

³ 同註**6**,頁 357。

❸ 《大正新脩大藏經》第31冊,《顯揚聖教論》,第1602經,頁484中 25-26。

^{◎ 《}大正新脩大藏經》第31冊,《大乘阿毗達磨雜集論》,第1606經, 頁702 上8-9。

^{◎ 《}大正新脩大藏經》第43冊,《成唯識論了義燈》,第1832經,頁 688中28-下2。

^{● 《}大正新脩大藏經》第27冊,《阿毗達磨大毗婆沙論》,第1545經, 頁660中18-20。

惡作作而棄捨;於其善作作而不捨。又於煩惱斷與未斷觀察作意,增上力故數數觀察。若知已斷便生歡喜;若知未斷則便數數勤修正道。**③**

又同論,卷三十:

何等名為數數隨念?謂於正法聽聞受持,從師獲得教誡 教授增上力故,令其定地諸相現前,緣此為境,流住無罪 適悅相應,所有正念隨轉安住。❷

此論中所言「數數」即是反覆、修習、研究等意。

(四)「數數念佛」之意?

本論的主題「數數」一詞並不全然與上述古文意同。此 詞中「數數」的第一個「數」,音所五切,音蜀戸太 Shuu 上聲,屬動詞乃計算之意。「數數」的第二個「數」,音朔 裕切,音樹戸太 Shuh 去聲,屬名詞乃事物多少之量詞。因 此此文中的「數數」,乃計算數量之意。

在佛教經論之中,可以搜索到許多「數數」一詞的用法,但是「數數念佛」卻沒有在佛教經論中出現過。因此「數數念佛」可以說是聖嚴所創新之詞,有時稱「數數念佛」,有時稱「念佛數數」 3 ,不過都是指同一種方法,

即是計算念佛數量之意。「數數」有計算數量之意,也即是「算數」,以計算數量為修行的方法,在印度時期既已存在,如《瑜伽師地論》卷二十七:

云何名為算數修習?謂略有四種算數修習。何等為四? 一者以一為一算數;二者以二為一算數;三者順算數;四 者逆算數。云何以一為一算數?謂若入息入時由緣入,出 息住念數以為一。若入息滅出息生,出向外時數為第二。 如是展轉數至其十,由此算數非略非廣,故唯至十,是名 以一為一算數。到

此種以一至十為計算入出息之修習法,又可稱為「數息法」。此「數息法」早在東晉·瞿曇僧伽提婆(生卒不詳) 譯《增一阿含經》中云:

就已經傳入中原,而聖嚴將原本數入出息的方法,轉換 成計算念佛法,此種「算數念佛」雖然不是聖嚴所初創,但 是他所提倡的「數數念佛」法,有別於其他祖師,因此可以

³ 同註**5**,頁 437 中 9-15。

⁹ 同註**5**,頁450中29-下3。

³ 同註2。

同註❷, 頁 431 上 21-28。

⑤ 《大正新脩大藏經》第2冊,《增一阿含經》,第125經,頁556中5-8。

說有其傳承又有創新之處。

念佛的「念」甲文字闕,金文與小篆略同。小篆「念」 从心、今聲,本義作「常思」解,乃不斷加以思考之意,故 从心。又以今為現時之意,往者已去,來者無常,能注意及 時思考,便可念茲在茲,故从今聲。「念」乃動詞,又作 「想」、「記掛」,長久思之之意。❸ 因此「念佛」是長久 思佛之意,聖嚴《禪與悟》中云:

解釋「念佛」是將現在的心放在佛的名號上面。「佛」 甲文、金文字闕。小篆佛,从人、弗聲,本義作「見不審」 解,乃指人對事物看不清楚而言,故从人。又弗有不正而欲 使正之意,佛則有見不審而仍欲見其審之意,故从弗聲。 惟此本義古罕見用,今所行者為別義。⑤「佛」乃梵語 Buddha 佛陀之略稱,早期稱釋迦牟尼佛,後來的念佛就沒有 特別指定為何佛了。又依宗密(780-841)所言念佛可以大分 為四種:觀想念佛、觀像念佛、稱名念佛、實相念佛。⑥稱 名念佛或者持名念佛只是單純地專注持念佛號,而「數數念佛」是念一句佛號數一個數目,從一數到十,周而復始,而佛號可以念阿彌陀佛,也可以念觀音菩薩。● 因此聖嚴所教授的「數數念佛」方法與一般的持名念佛方法不同,也與其他祖師所創的不同,其不同處待下一節再細論之。

三、「數數念佛」即是禪法?

(一)「禪」是什麽?

唐虞禪,夏后、殷、周繼,其義一也。②

另有動詞三種用法:除地為墠而祭,例如《大戴禮· 保傅》:

³ 同註**0**, 頁 487。

[●] 釋聖嚴,《禪與悟》,《法鼓全集》4-6,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年,頁
145。

❸ 同註●, 頁 66。

^{● 《}卍續大藏經》第5冊,《大方廣佛華嚴經普賢行願品別行疏鈔》,第 229經,頁280下8-9。

[●] 同註2,頁24。

[●] 同註●, 頁 1182。

② 同註**⑥**, 百 222。

封泰山而禪梁父。43

又有傳位之義,例如《魏志·文帝丕紀》:

漢帝……使兼御史大夫張音持節奉璽綬禪位。●

又有授予之義,例如《莊子·山木》:

仲尼曰:「化為萬物,不知其禪之者,焉知其所終?焉 知其所始?」**⑤**

佛教從印度經由西域傳入了中國,當時傳入了一種梵語 dhyāna 音譯為「禪那」,其意譯為「靜慮」的實踐方法。 翻譯者何以選擇音不同又意義相去甚遠的「禪」,來翻譯 「dhyāna」?依據東漢·安世高(?-170)譯《長阿含十報 法經》卷下:

第八九法。起包九次定。何等九?意止初禪,為一定; 從一次二禪竟,為二定;從二次三禪竟,為三定;從三次 四禪竟,為四定;從四次禪竟空定,為五定;從空次竟度 識,為六定;從識次竟度無有欲,為七定;從無有欲次竟 度無有思想,為八定;從無有思想次竟度滅,為九定。46

其中所譯出的「禪」,被推測安世高是翻譯「禪」字最早的翻譯者♥。此「禪」為時延切,音蟬彳ㄢ Charn 平聲,其字是用形聲結合,其意義根據世親造,唐·玄奘譯《阿毗達磨俱舍論》卷二十八:

依何義故立靜慮名?由此寂靜能審慮故,審慮即是實了知義。··

又,玄奘譯《瑜伽師地論》卷三十三:

得知「禪」是指心專注於一境達到寂靜,就能深入思慮 義理。而到了唐·宗密《禪源諸詮集都序》卷上:

禪是天竺之語, 具云:「禪那」, 中華翻為「思惟

[●] 黃懷信主撰,《大戴禮記彙校集注》,西安:三秦出版,2005年,頁 420、421。

[●] 盧弼著,《三國志集解》,北京:中華書局,1982年,頁73。

⑤ 同註**②**,頁 694。

^{● 《}大正新脩大藏經》第1冊,《長阿含十報法經》,第13經,頁240上 5-11。

[●] 麻天祥著,《中國禪宗思想發展史》,武漢:武漢大學出版社,2007 年,頁4。

同註⑤, 頁 467 下 7-8。

修」,亦名「靜慮」,皆定慧之通稱也。⑤

解釋「禪」為「定慧」。又同卷:

聞說即心即佛,便推屬胸襟之禪,不知心佛正是經論之本意,今若不以權實之經論,對配深淺禪宗,焉得以教照心,以心解教?萄

將「禪」轉義解釋為「禪宗」,此處非指一般宗派的概念,而是「禪」之意義,因此「禪」與「禪宗」就有了密切的關係ூ。

聖嚴在禪的教學中解釋:

禪是什麼?從字面的意義看,禪是一種「冥想」,並用 冥想的方法達到入定的境界。❸

指出「禪」是一種「冥想」的修行方法。他在《禪與 悟》解釋「禪」的第一種定義「冥想」中:

若以我的觀念來說明,就是用方法把散亂的心念變成

能夠集中的心念,然後再達到心念的前後統一,這就是入 定,如果能更進一步把統一的定心破除、揚棄,出現的就 是無我和無心的境界。一般稱此境界為見性、開悟,也就 是佛教六波羅蜜中的第五──禪波羅蜜。❸

指出用禪的方法可以達到入定及見性、開悟的境界, 並點出將心念由散亂→集中→統一→無心四個層次的開悟 過程。

(二)「數數念佛」是否為禪法?

在探討此項議題之前,必須先闡明「念佛與禪」之間的關係?兩者相互的關係大致上可以從三個面向來探討:一、源流;二、歷史發展;三、修行方法。

首先兩者的源流都可以在印度佛教之中找到其起源,「念佛」早在《阿含經》的「六念」或「十念」之中就出現了;「禪」在印度並非佛教所專有,最早可以追溯到印度古代的吠陀和奧義書,為了實現解脫所採用的「瑜伽」修行方法,其中修習「瑜伽」的八個階段,就包括有禪和定。其二從歷史的發展來看「念佛與禪」兩者,在形成各自的宗派之前,在宗派意識尚未高漲之前,早就有念佛思想的禪法,如教導念阿彌陀佛的《般舟三昧經》,其修行方法是一種由專心念佛而得見佛的大乘禪觀,以大乘般若學非有非無的觀點來解釋「佛」,是將禪定與念佛結合的「念佛禪」,❸

❸ 《大正新脩大藏經》第48冊,《禪源諸詮集都序》,第2015經,頁 399 上18-19。

³ 同上,頁400中25-28。

❷ 劉貴傑著,《禪宗哲學》,臺北:臺灣商務印書館,2013年,頁1。

³ 同註**2**,頁 9。

³ 同註**5**, 百17。

❸ 洪修平著,《中國禪學思想史》,臺北:文津出版,1994年,頁2-7。

當「念佛禪」傳入中國之後,歷經高僧祖師大德的詮釋與傳播,從菩提達摩與曇鸞開始,禪宗與淨土宗的宗派自覺和發展脈絡漸漸清晰,日益顯著,之後才真正有所謂的禪淨合流或禪淨雙修。❸

聖嚴又是如何看待「念佛與禪」?他曾經在二〇〇〇年 七月二十四日至三十一日之間,舉辦了第一屆念佛禪七,並 在《抱疾遊高峰》中云:

過去只有禪七和佛七,也用禪修的方法在輔助念佛的功能,還沒有正式把念佛算作是禪七。這回是把念佛的淨土 法門,回歸於禪修的一項活動,念佛本是六念之一,也是 禪觀的一種。◆

他在二〇〇〇年之前的佛七修行活動,只把禪修做為輔助念佛功能來運用,直到第一屆念佛禪七才將念佛回歸至禪修活動,使用「回歸」的字眼,充分顯示出對念佛方法的態度是主張「念佛即是禪修」,是禪觀的一種。更進一步《聖嚴法師教淨土法門》中云:

念佛通常被認為是淨土法門,為什麼變成禪了呢?其實沒有一樣特定的東西或法門叫做禪,因為中國禪宗是「以

無門為法門」,而念佛根本就是禪法中的一個項目,所以 不需要特別把淨土法門獨立出來。❸

強調念佛根本上就是禪法,不需要特別從禪法中獨立出 淨土法門。又在《抱疾遊高峰》云:

念佛禪七的目的不在求感應,不求見瑞相,不求見佛國 淨土依正莊嚴,而在達成《楞嚴經·大勢至菩薩圓通章》 所說的:「都攝六根,淨念相繼。」然後把「淨念」二字 分成專念、一念、無念三個層次,目的是能夠在修行念佛 法門的當下,見到自心淨土及自性彌陀,就能心淨國土淨 而體現人間淨土。❸

念佛禪的目的與一般的禪法完全相同,不求感應、瑞相、見佛等,自淨其心即能體現人間淨土。而「數數念佛」本身就是從禪法中演變出來,其演變的理論與實踐,擬一一探究之。

(三)「數數念佛」的理論與實踐

中國禪宗傳承史,將求那跋陀羅列屬譯經三藏,而以菩提達摩為初祖,慧可為二祖,僧璨為三祖,道信為四祖,

❸ 許穎著,《近現代禪淨合流研究》,四川:巴蜀出版,2010年,頁35。

[■] 釋聖嚴,《聖嚴法師教淨土法門》,臺北:法鼓文化,2010年,頁 187。

③ 同註**3**。

弘忍為五祖,五祖門下有「宣什宗」,如宗密《圓覺經大疏 鈔》卷三:

疏有藉傳香而存佛者,第六家也,即南山念佛門禪宗也。其先亦五祖下分出,法名宣什,果州未和上、閬州蘊玉、相如縣尼一乘皆弘之。余不的知稟承師資照穆,言傳香者其初集眾禮懺等儀式。如金和上門下,欲授法時,以傳香為資師之信,和上手付,弟子却授和上,和上却授弟子,如是三遍,人皆如此。⑩

宗密把禪宗分為七家,第六為「南山念佛門禪宗」,此派由來,在宗密時代,已經不知道其師資傳承,弘傳此派禪法者,有果州(今四川蒼溪縣)未和上、閬州(今四川閬中縣)蘊玉、相如縣尼一乘,根據此處所記載的宣什宗禪法,應當是盛行於嘉陵江上流地區。 如此中的「金和上」指淨眾寺無相(684-762),其授法儀式,必先「傳香」三遍,是此派之特色。依據《歷代法寶記》云:

金和上每年十二月正月,與四眾百千萬人受緣,嚴設道 場處,高座說法,先教引聲念佛,盡一氣,絕聲停念訖, 說云:無憶、無念、莫妄。無憶是戒,無念是定,莫妄是

惠,此三句語即是總持門。@

無相說法之前,必先教人念佛,一口氣念佛,至一口氣 念完為止,在此文中並沒有明說「念佛」的詳細過程,然而 在宗密《圓覺經大疏鈔》卷三:

言存佛者,正授法時,先說法門道理修行意趣,然後令一字念佛。初引聲由念,後漸漸沒聲,微聲乃至無聲,送佛至意,意念猶麤,又送至心念,念存想有佛恒在心中,乃至無想,盍得道。⑥

指出無相在授法時,先開示教義及修行意趣之後,令在場聽法之大眾念一字「佛」,並且詳細地指導念佛的方法,首先出聲長念,漸漸低聲念,再漸漸微聲念,念到無聲時,將「佛」送到意念中,當意念轉粗時,再將「佛」送到心念之中,念念之中長存想著,有「佛」在心中,直到無念,達成心佛不二,即心即佛,至此方能得道開悟。 最後無相開示「無憶、無念、莫妄」三句,此三句語是無相淨眾禪的心要,三句也可歸結一句「無念」,就是戒定慧具足。 此種念佛方法即是宣什宗的念佛禪法門。

^{● 《}卍續大藏經》第9冊,《圓覺經大疏鈔》,第245經,頁534下20-535上1。

[●] 劉果宗著,《禪宗思想史概說》,臺北:文津出版,2001年,頁54。

❸ 《大正新脩大藏經》第51冊,《歷代法寶記》,第2075經,頁185上 11-15。

❸ 同註●, 頁 534 下 20-535 上 5。

⁴ 同計**4**, 頁 55。

᠖ 陳揚炯著,《中國淨土宗通史》,江蘇:古籍出版,2002年,頁427。

依據宗密《禪源諸詮集都序》云:

初息妄修心宗者,說眾生雖本有佛性,而無始無明覆之不見故輪迴生死,諸佛已斷妄想故見性了了,出離生死神通自在。當知凡聖功用不同,外境內心各有分限,故須依師言教,背境觀心,息滅妄念,念盡即覺悟,無所不知。如鏡昏塵,須勤勤拂拭,塵盡明現即無所不照。又須明解趣入禪境方便,遠離憒鬧住閑靜處,調身調息跏趺宴默, 舌拄上顎心注一境,南侁、北秀、保唐、宣什等門下,皆此類也。❻

宣什宗的念佛禪法被宗密歸屬於「息妄修心宗」。此宗 主張眾生本有佛性,因為凡聖功用不同而有分限,又以外境 和內心的層次來界定凡夫或聖人,因此欲想「覺悟」必須依 師言教,面對外境時以「背境」的態度處理,境本無差別, 由於凡夫的迷惑之心,而有順逆之分別,順境容易使人生起 貪欲之煩惱,逆境與自己身心相悖離,以致引起痛苦或瞋 恚,所以對治「境」當以「背離、違背」遠離貪瞋癡三毒; 又面對內心時,當以「觀心」的生滅狀態,向內觀照已心, 息滅妄念,以達成明心之本性。又在趣入禪境的方便上,安 居在閑靜之處所,調身、調息、禪坐並且使心住一境,得以 「無所不知」、「無所不照」,見性成佛。

禪修方法的念佛與數數念佛有何不同?念佛為什麼要加

上數字?聖嚴在《禪的世界》中指出:

一般人的心較混亂,可以一方面念佛,另一方面胡思亂 想,易於養成散亂心念佛,若數數念佛則較易發現妄念。**⑤**

「數數念佛」並不是在計算念了多少次數,而其目的是讓自己的心念能集中專注圖,並且發現妄念,此種心念的專注與發現妄念,即是禪修必備的功用。念佛也可以達到心念的集中專注,又為什麼一定要加上數字?一至十之數,有何力量?如前文已經探討過「數」有「相續」、「一即十」、「空」、「智慧」等意,以下擬一一探究之。

1. 相續流轉

「數」有相續之意。《阿毗達磨俱舍論》卷四:

何名相續?謂因果性,三世諸行。@

解釋「相續」是因果次第而不斷絕也。唐‧如理(生卒不詳)集《成唯識論疏義演》卷三:

何名流轉?答:「集因滅果不流息名流,苦果起而翻因

⑥ 同註❸,頁402中21-下1。

[●] 釋聖嚴,《禪的世界》,《法鼓全集》4-8,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年, 頁 15。

❸ 同註2,頁24。

^{◎ 《}大正新脩大藏經》第29冊,《阿毗達磨俱舍論》,第1558經,頁22 下14-15。

名轉。 100

說明「流轉」是因果翻轉不流息。「數數念佛」時,一至十的不斷絕,周而復始的流息,產生運轉的力量,可以達到念念相續的境界,如唐·淨覺(683-750?)集《楞伽師資記》:

欲入一行三昧。應處空閑。捨諸亂意。不取相貌。繫心 一佛。專稱名字。隨佛方便所。端身正向。能於一佛。念 念相續。即是念中。能見過去未來現在諸佛。**②**

念念相續不間斷,必能於念念之中見到三世諸佛。

2. 一即十

「一」,甲文一,金文一,與小篆一略同。小篆一,从一横置,本義作「數之始也」解,即最初之第一位數名。一字僅一橫畫,為見而知其為一者,其他雖有一畫而成之字,但無一之自然平置,顯明易識,故泛指事物之最初,僅見而無偶者為一。❷「十」,甲文十,作上下相貫之豎一,今習俗以手式示數,有將食指橫伸代表「一」,將食指直伸代表「十」者,猶存古代以 | 為十之遺風。小篆十,一示東西,

一示南北,東、西、南、北四方與中央,因此得以全備無缺,故其本義作「數之具也」解,單位數至十齊足,十以上之十位、百位、千位、萬位……復以十數起以相倍,如十十為「百」,十百為「千」,十千為「萬」等數至十即夠用,故名十為具數。❸ 在唐·傳奧述《梵網經記》卷一:

十數表圓,意彰無盡。個

表示圓滿無盡之意。又華嚴圓教說諸法之數量總以十,以此現其圓滿無盡之意涵。「一即十」乃一至十之數,均由一相疊而成,若以一為本數,則舍一而不能有二至十,所以一即二、一即三、一即四、一即五、一即六、一即七、一即八、一即九、一即十。此所論本數之一為有體數,二至十為無體數,即空也,所以一十相即。又一為有力數,二至十為無力數,所以一十相入,此即是華嚴一家的「相即相入」思想。<a>3

中國東周末年的《易經・繋辭上傳》中云:

易有太極,是生兩儀,兩儀生四象,四象生八卦,八卦 定吉凶,吉凶生大業。**™**

^{● 《}卍續大藏經》第49冊,《成唯識論疏義演》,第815經,頁574中8-9。

^{● 《}大正新脩大藏經》第85冊,《楞伽師資記》,第2837經,頁1286下 27-1287上2。

② 同註**①**,頁1。

³ 同註●,頁170。

^{● 《}卍續大藏經》第38冊,《梵網經記》,第682經,頁247中20。

❸ 《大正新脩大藏經》第45冊,《華嚴一乘教義分齊章》,第1866經, 頁503中24-504上5。

 [《]易經·繋辭上傳》第十一章。

大業指涵蓋萬物之理的盛大之業。● 指出太極是使萬物存在之極至之理,宇宙間一切存在之根源,這根源只有一,而不能是多,一切皆因為這太極的創生不已,而各得其存在。● 宋儒周濂溪(1017-1073)《通書》理性命第二十二,進一步詮釋云:

認為萬物是水、火、金、木、土五種特殊實物變化而來的,五種特殊實物是從陰陽二氣變化而來的,陰陽二氣又是從「一」變化而來的。也就是說一切的存在,皆根源於此太極之一,而這太極之一,並不離開萬物,因此每一物都顯示出太極之理,皆因稟受太極之理而得以存在,所以每一物都得其正。◎朱熹(1130-1200)曾為其解釋云:

萬一各正,小大有定;言萬個是一個,一個是萬個。蓋 統體是一太極,然又一物各具一太極。® 強調太極是絕對之一,每一物皆是由於太極之故而得以存在,所以每一物皆顯示出太極的意義,因此每一物都具有一太極,太極因萬物之多而有多相,有如月印萬川,每一河川中都映現一個月,各個月只是同一個月的多相,而這多相的月根本就是同一個月。❷ 這與佛教中的「千江印月」之意,也就是「一即多」之意。

3. 空

前文探討「數之概念的起源」中,說明過計數是一種精細的心理程序,從一數至十,是有心理的過程次序,屬於高度文化的表現,並且在計數之時,必須要有專注心,放下一切,心無雜物,達到心中無念,有如進入虛空之中,才能計算得準確無誤、清楚分明,所以「數」从「婁」,有「空」之意,而此處之空,非指佛教之空性。小篆婁,从毋从中女,毋即無,中女取《易經》離卦「中虛」之意,故其本義作「空」解,乃中無所有之意。③因此從一數至十時,心理必須空無一物、無有雜念,才能在進行計數的過程中,順序次第、準確無誤地數完十個數目,也就是一種專注的心力,淨空心中所有的妄念與雜念,達成一心不亂的境界。

4. 智慧

依 據 唐· 窺 基 (632-682) 撰《 成 唯 識 論 述 記 》 卷 一云:

[☞] 郭建勳注譯,《易經讀本》,臺北:三民書局,1996年,頁522。

❸ 楊祖漢註釋,〈一物一太極〉,《中華百科全書》,臺北:中華學術院,1981年,頁10上。

[●] 梁紹輝著,《太極圖說通書義解》,海口:海南出版社,1991年,頁 157-166。

³ 同註**3**。

❸ 《欽定四庫全書》子部,《御纂朱子全書》第52巻,頁21。

³ 同註**3**, 頁 10 中。

³ 同註●,頁320。

梵云僧佉,此翻為數,即智惠數。❸

「數」即智慧之數也。依據世親造·玄奘譯《攝大乘論 釋》卷四:

數識者,謂算計性。❸

算計量度一乃至無數之識稱為「數識」。又無性造·玄 裝譯《攝大乘論釋》券四:

數識者,謂似一等算數影現。……(中略)……於此諸 識,皆有一等差別性故,依之建立數影現識。❸

此「數識」依一至無數之差別性而建立數影之現識。現 識又稱阿賴耶識,數識是由阿賴耶識之變異而生起十一種識之 一,其另外十種:身識、身者識、受者識、應受識、正受識、 世識、處識、言說識、自他差別識、善惡兩道生死識。⑤ 因 此「數識」乃阿賴耶識變異之一種,經過特定方法修行至佛果 時,即可轉有漏之數識成無漏之數識,從而得大圓鏡智,其他的十種識,亦可經過特定方法修行而得智慧,只要其中一種修行得大圓鏡智,其他即可得有智慧。此智離諸分別,所緣行相微細難知,不妄不愚,一切境相,性相清淨,離諸雜染,如大圓鏡之光明,能遍映萬象,纖毫不遺。❸

綜合以上,一數至十之力量,能使心念相續,達到一即十之相即相入之圓滿無盡,念念無有雜物,直至一心不亂,可以轉數識成大圓鏡智。雖然依「數識」是可以轉識成智,就「轉識成智」的意義而言,八個識轉成四個智,是轉迷為悟、轉妄為真。❷但是單單只有「數數」,唯恐在「轉識」的修行過程中易落入數字的執著,因此還必須加上「佛號」,使「數數」帶有「佛」之特性,也就是「空性」、「如來藏性」,因此「數數念佛」禪法,可以說是一種融合「阿賴耶識」與「如來藏識」的實踐修行禪法。又《聖嚴法師教禪坐》中云:

念一句佛號數一個數目,清清楚楚地知道這個數目的存在,再繼續往下念第二句佛號第二個數目,很清楚地把注意力集中在所數的數目上。**⑩**

又《聖嚴法師教話頭禪》中云:

^{● 《}大正新脩大藏經》第43冊,《成唯識論述記》,第1830經,頁252中3。

❸ 《大正新脩大藏經》第31冊,《攝大乘論釋》,第1597經,頁338上 15-16。

^{◎ 《}大正新脩大藏經》第31冊,《攝大乘論釋》,第1598經,頁399上 18-下21。

[《]大正大藏經》第31冊,《攝大乘論》,第1593經,頁118上24-27。

❸ 《大正大藏經》第31冊,《成唯識論》,第1585經,頁56上12-16。

[●] 釋聖嚴,《探索識界——八識規矩頌講記》,《法鼓全集》7-9,臺北:
法鼓文化,1999年,頁104。

同註②, 頁 25。

數數念佛不要配合呼吸,也不要想像阿彌陀佛的形象, 心中可以有數數的聲音,但是不去想像數字的形狀。**②**

「數數念佛」時,心中可以有數數的聲音,此「有」聲音,即是「聽」聲音之意,聽自己數數念佛的聲音。此「聽」非是向外抓取聲塵,而是向內收攝專注發自心中的聲音,乃是「觀照」的方法,然後漸次進入《楞嚴經》中觀音菩薩的耳根圓通境界「入流亡所」,用意根的心在聽數數念佛的聲音,漸漸進入被聽的聲音之流,而忘掉自己是在音流之中,也把音流忘掉了。❷又進一步反過來聽聞自己的自性聲音,自性是無聲的、沒有形象的,即是空性,也即是眾生本具的佛性如來藏,如《楞嚴經》中:「旋汝倒聞機,反聞聞自性,性成無上道」,聽聞自性修成以後,即為開悟成佛,明心見性。❷

四、「數數念佛」與「十念記數」、 「晨朝十念」之比較

聖嚴的「數數念佛」方法,與清末民初高僧印光 (1862-1940)所提倡的「十念記數」念佛法之間有何異 同?「數數念佛」是念佛時,不注意呼吸及其他任何事物, 只注意自己在念佛,頭腦裡不要出現數目「字」的形象,清清楚楚地知道數目的存在,從一數到十,周而復始地念,可以有默念佛號及數數目的聲音♥。而「十念記數」在《印光大師全集》第一冊《印光法師文鈔卷一·復高邵麟居士書四》中記載:

所謂十念記數者,當念佛時,從一句至十句,須念得分明,仍須記得分明。至十句已,又須從一句至十句念,不可二十、三十,隨念隨記,不可掐珠,唯憑心記。若十句直記為難,或分為兩氣,則從一至五,從六至十。若又費力,當從一至三,從四至六,從七至十,作三氣念。念得清楚,記得清楚,聽得清楚,妄念無處著腳,一心不亂,久當自得耳。◆

得知印光的念佛方法也主張念一句佛號數一個數目,從一數到十;清楚地知道自己念佛記數目;清楚地聽自己念佛數數的聲音。然而兩人所主張的念佛法,並不全然相同,印光的念佛法在《印光法師文鈔卷一》中所說的分「兩氣」、「三氣」,「氣」有「氣息、呼吸」的意義®,也就是說印光的「十念記數」念佛時,是要配合呼吸,一呼吸念一句

② 釋聖嚴,《聖嚴法師教話頭禪》,臺北:法鼓文化,2009年,頁65-66。

❷ 釋聖嚴,《觀音妙智:觀世音菩薩耳根圓通法門講要》,臺北:法鼓文化,2010年,頁27。

³ 同上,頁252。

³ 同註**6**,頁15。

[■] 釋印光著,《印光大師全集》第1冊,臺北:福峰圖書,1999年,頁 65-66。

⑤ 另一說法,依陳劍鍠著《圓通證道──印光的淨土啟化》中解釋「氣」為「段」,也就是分成兩段、三段之意。(臺北:東大出版,2002年)

佛號,如果無法記得十句,也可以分成兩氣,也就是一呼吸 念五句、五句,如果也費力,又可以分成三氣,一呼吸念三 句、三句、四句。印光的隨息念佛只在前期時使用,依據 〈與諦閑法師書〉中云:

光自出家以來,即信淨土一法, …… (中略) ……, 因日閱十餘紙淨典,以發勝進之心。至《寶王》隨息法門, 試用此法,遂覺妄念不似以前之潮湧瀾翻。想久而久之, 當必有霧散雲消,徹見天日之時。又查《文類》、《聖 賢錄》皆錄此一段,因悟慈雲十念,謂藉氣束心,當本乎 此。而《蓮宗寶鑑》亦載此法,足見古人懸知末世機宜, 非此莫入,而預設其法。♥

又云:

得知印光是從飛錫的《念佛三昧寶王論》的隨息念佛 法,再加上慈雲遵式的十念法門,結合兩者演變成「十念隨 息念佛記數法」。❷ 到了後期,依據他回〈復永嘉某居士書

五〉中云:

十念記數,不是數息。以其從一至十,同於數息。又以 《蓮宗寶鑑》,訛作至百千萬,恐受其病,引為證明。目 為數息持名,斷斷不可。◎

得知印光不再使用數息念佛了,甚至認為不可以數息念 佛,此種主張其確實的時間點,則無法從其留下之文獻資料 中考察。又,依據〈復周壽超居士書〉中云:

念佛以志誠為主,若志誠,則不會大散,當用隨念隨聽之法。掐珠不過為防懈怠,掐之有礙,則不必掐。隨念隨聽,比隨息好,當云隨息,不可云數息,光《文鈔》隨念隨聽之法,恐汝不善用,則但念得清清楚楚,聽得清清楚楚即已。

印光甚至鼓勵「隨念隨聽」之法,主張不可數息,不必 搯念珠,只要念得清楚,聽得清楚即可。因此印光的「十念 記數」是早期使用配合呼吸,後期不再配合呼吸,而聖嚴的 「數數念佛」是主張不需配合呼吸,應是兩人主張念佛法最 主要的不同關鍵點。印光為了解釋「十念」,又在〈復高邵

⁹ 同註**9**,頁131。

³ 同註**5**, 頁 132。

⁹ 同註**6**, 頁 200-202。

⑩ 同註❸,頁108。

[●] 釋印光著,《印光法師文鈔三編(上冊)》,嘉義:弘達印刷出版, 2002年,頁470。

麟居士書四〉中說明:

此之十念,與晨朝十念,攝妄則同,用功大異。晨朝十念,儘一口氣為一念,不論佛數多少。此以一句佛為一念。彼唯晨朝十念則可,若二十、三十,則傷氣成病。 此則念一句佛,心知一句。念十句佛,心知十句。從一至十,從一至十,縱日念數萬,皆如是記。

印光將自己的「十念」與北宋·慈雲遵式的「晨朝十念」®相比較,遵式的「十念」是「十口氣」,不記佛數多少;印光的「十念」是「十句佛」,從一至十記數。遵式的念佛法主張配合呼吸,是一口氣念佛無數聲至氣盡為止;印光的念佛法亦是主張配合呼吸,不同的是從一口氣一句佛至十口氣十句佛,不過後來就不再配合呼吸了;聖嚴的念佛法是主張不配合呼吸,從一句佛一數目至十句佛十數目,因此三人的念佛法,如表一所示,其中的異同了然分明。

表一比較可以得知,聖嚴之「數數念佛」法是參考了印 光的「十念記數」,他在《念佛生淨土》中云:

此一十念記數方法,我在指導禪修及念佛方法時,也 常介紹給新學者,禪修者如果數息法困難,用此十念記數

表一:聖嚴、印光、遵式三位高僧的念佛方法之異同表

方法 / 人名	聖嚴	印光	遵式	備註
佛號	0	0	0	1. 聖嚴與印光念佛十聲。 2. 遵式念佛無數聲。
數目	0	0	×	1. 聖嚴與印光從一至十個數目。 2. 遵式沒有數目。
呼吸	×	○及×	0	1. 聖嚴不配合呼吸地念佛。 2. 印光前期一口氣念一句佛號以及後期不配合呼吸地念佛。 3. 遵式一口氣念多聲佛號至無氣為止。

法,便很順利。所以我也極其感恩印光大師發明了此一十 念記數的念佛妙法。**⑩**

也清楚地指出自己的「數數念佛」是傳承淵源於印光, 但從表中分析所示,三者有其相異之處,因此聖嚴的「數數 念佛」是有別於遵式的念佛法,但是傳承了印光後期的十念 記數法,又進而使用在教授禪修上,並具有獨特性格的念佛 禪法。

五、「話頭禪」、「默照禪」中的「數數念佛」

聖嚴所教授的禪法之中,傳承於臨濟宗的「話頭禪」, 傳承於曹洞宗的「默照禪」,他是如何運用「數數念佛」引 導禪修者進入參禪?如何直入默照?

⑩ 同註❸,頁66。

⑩ 北宋·慈雲遵式述,〈往生淨土十念法門〉, X74, No. 1468,頁 128a4-20。

[●] 釋聖嚴,《念佛生淨土》,《法鼓全集》5-8,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年,百116。

· 316 · 聖嚴研究

數數念佛禪法之研究 · 317 ·

(一) 進入話頭禪

臨濟宗所使用的參話頭在《聖嚴法師教話頭禪》之 中云:

參話頭時方法是否得力,因人而異。有些人一開始即可用上話頭,有些人則需要從數息、念佛入手,之後才能用話頭。**◎**

話頭禪可以先用數息或念佛開始,指導因控制呼吸而發生障礙的禪修者,改用「數數念佛」的方法,等到心安定下來後,再使用話頭。◎ 接著又云:

正在用話頭的過程中,也可能因為心力、體力,或者方法不得要領,結果產生散亂、妄想或煩燥,因而無法用話頭,若是出現這種情形,便要回到數息或念佛,但是不要變換方法,一下數息、一下念佛,最好數息就專門數息,不要念佛;念佛就專門念佛,不要數息。

如果話頭用不好,再回到數息或念佛,因此使用「數 數念佛」就不要使用「數息」,才能度過因為心力或體力不 足,而產生的不安定。「數數念佛」時,如果不斷地出現妄 念、雜念來干擾,或者因為對數字的慣性而成機器化,致使 心念無法集中,此時聖嚴即會教授禪修者云:

雜念仍不斷浮現的話,不妨改用倒著數數,從十倒數到 一。若再不行,還可跳著數,只數偶數或只數奇數。甚至 還可把數字增至二十來倒數。◎

對治妄念、雜念的方法可以倒著數數,也可以數偶數或數奇數,甚至可以倒數數字增加到二十,這些都屬於善巧方便,是為了對治散亂,等到心念慢慢集中時,再恢復從一到十的數數念佛,直到回心返照問起正在「念佛的是誰?」,此時即是進入「話頭禪」的始端。何謂「回心返照」?回心即是迴轉心念;返照也是返聞,「返照自性」、「返聞自性」,在「數數念佛」時,需要向內聽聞自己數數念佛的聲音,直到迴轉心念剎那驚醒「念佛的是誰?」,這即是《楞嚴經》中「旋汝倒聞機」。進入此階段,聖嚴教授云:

「念佛是誰」四字,最著重在個「誰」字,其餘三字,不過言其大者而已。如穿衣吃飯的是誰,屙屎放尿的是誰,打無明爭人我的是誰,能知能覺的是誰,不論行住坐臥,「誰」字一舉便有,最容易發起疑念,不待反覆思量卜度作意才有。故「誰」字話頭,實在是參禪妙法。⑩

⑤ 同註❷,頁64。

⑩ 同註⑩,頁65。

[☞] 同註♥,頁64。

[◎] 同註2,頁38。

[●] 釋聖嚴,《禪門修證指要》,《法鼓全集》4-1,臺北:法鼓文化,1999
年,頁237。

此問「念佛的是誰?」問的是法身理體,與諸佛相應的是什麼? 此時心念專注,容易發疑情,促成疑團,再進一步粉碎疑團,粉碎疑團時可能會有三種狀況:一種是見性;一種是徹悟;另一種什麼都不是,端視疑情力量的大小而定。 **①**

(二)直入默照禪

「數數念佛」如何直入「默照禪」?這個議題比進入「話頭禪」來得難解。為什麼?因為在聖嚴教授默照禪之中,並沒有像「話頭禪」說得清楚明白,因此只能在禪修實踐過程中捕捉一些連結的關鍵點,《默照》中云:

念至無佛可念,可能出現空靈,亦未必出現空靈。 @

一者繫心不動,任其繼續沉澱澄清,以至於不見一物,虚空沉寂,自亦不覺處於空靈狀態,是為正途;否則,若滯於空靈——例如「光音澄湛,空曠無涯」的覺受之中,尚未真入深定,僅勝於輕安境界。**⑤**

此種不耽滯於空靈的覺受之中,如同宏智正覺(1091-1157)坐禪箴中的「水清徹底兮,魚行遲遲」形容默照禪的悟境,是描寫在時間與空間之中,都是那麼地寧靜,沒有自我中心的執著,魚和水是相對境,就是默照同時。 如果耽滯於空靈的「光音澄湛,空曠無涯」的覺受之中,就僅只比「輕安境」勝一些,並未真正地進入深定,也非真正的悟境,只是過程而已,必須要到達「寂靜境」才是真正最高的悟境。 **6**

六、結語

「數」是一種抽象的概念,人類由用手指或實物計數, 發展到用數字計數,計數是一種精細的心理程序,因此佛教 禪者運用它來當修行的所緣,因為「數」有「相續流轉」、 「一即十」、「空」、「智慧」等作用,能開發禪者的「數 識」達到大圓鏡智的境界。

⑩ 同註⑩,頁69。

[●] 同註●,頁83。

[●] 釋聖嚴,《默照》,臺北:法鼓文化,2010年,頁138-139。

釋聖嚴,《動靜皆自在》,《法鼓全集》4-15,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年,頁184。

[●] 釋聖嚴,《禪的體驗·禪的開示》,《法鼓全集》4-3,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年,頁351。

⑤ 同上,頁350。

⑩ 同註❶,頁24-25。

[●] 同註●,頁184-185。

聖嚴的禪法教學之中,如果修行單單只以「數數」為所 緣,惟恐禪者在數字上生起執著,因此加上了「佛號」,稱 為「數數念佛」禪法,它帶有一種融合「阿賴耶識」與「如 來藏識」特性的實踐修行禪法。而此種方法常常被當作是一 種對治法門,它可以對治數息禪者,控制呼吸的緊繃狀況; 它也可以對治隨息禪者,昏沉散亂的狀況;它甚至可以對治 念佛禪者,機械化無意義的狀況;最後又可以引導「數數念 佛」禪者進入參話頭或直入默照達到明心見性的目標。

參考文獻

一、佛典文獻

《長阿含十報法經》,T1,No.13。

《阿毗達磨大毗婆沙論》, T27, No. 1545。

《阿毗達摩俱舍論》, T29, No. 1558。

《瑜伽師地論》,T30,No.1579。

《成唯識論》, T31, No. 1585。

《攝大乘論》, T31, No. 1593。

《攝大乘論釋》, T31, No. 1597。

《攝大乘論釋》, T31, No. 1598。

《顯揚聖教論》,T31,No.1602。

《大乘阿毗達磨雜集論》, T31, No. 1606。

《大方廣佛華嚴經搜玄分齊通智方軌》,T35,No.1732。

《成唯識論述記》, T43, No. 1830。

《成唯識論了義燈》, T43, No. 1832。

《華嚴一乘教義分齊章》, T45, No. 1866。

《禪源諸詮集都序》, T48, No. 2015。

《歷代法寶記》, T51, No. 2075。

《楞伽師資記》, T85, No. 2837。

《大方廣佛華嚴經普賢行願品別行疏鈔》,X5,No. 229。

《圓覺經大疏鈔》, X9, No. 245。

《梵網經記》, X38, No. 682。

《成唯識論疏義演》, X49, No. 815。

〈往生淨土十念法門〉, X74, No. 1468。

二、漌籍文獻

東漢·許慎著,清·段玉裁注,《說文解字》,臺北:萬卷樓圖書,2002年8月。

高海夫、金性堯主編,《古詩漢魏六朝新賞 13》,臺北:地球出版,1993年。

張雙棣撰,《淮南子校釋下》,北京:北京大學出版,1997年。

梁紹輝著,《太極圖說通書義解》,海口:海南出版社,1991年。

郭建勳注譯,《易經讀本》,臺北:三民書局,1996年。

郭慶籓撰,《莊子集釋》,北京:中華書局,1961年。

黃懷信主撰,《大戴禮記·彙校集注》,西安:三秦出版,2005 年。

楊伯峻譯注,《孟子譯注》,北京:中華書局,1960年。

葉衡選注,《禮記》,臺北:臺灣商務印書,1964年。

盧弼著,《三國志集解》,北京:中華書局,1982年。

韓兆琦注譯,《新譯史記》,臺北:三民書局,2008年。

嚴捷、嚴北溟注,《列子譯注》,臺北:仰哲出版,1987年。

蘇淵雷主編,劉周堂注譯,《三國志今注今譯》,臺北:建安出版,1996年。

三、《法鼓全集》

《禪門修證指要》,《法鼓全集》4-1,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年。

《禪的體驗·禪的開示》,《法鼓全集》4-3,臺北:法鼓文化, 1999年。

《禪與悟》,《法鼓全集》4-6,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年。

《禪的世界》,《法鼓全集》4-8,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年。

《聖嚴法師教禪坐》,《法鼓全集》4-9,臺北:法鼓文化,1999 年。

《禪鑰》,《法鼓全集》4-10,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年。

《動靜皆自在》,《法鼓全集》4-15,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年。

《念佛牛淨十》,《法鼓全集》5-8,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年。

《抱疾游高峰》,《法鼓全集》6-12,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年。

《探索識界——八識規矩頌講記》,《法鼓全集》7-9,臺北:法鼓文化,1999年。

四、專書著作

余介石·倪可權,《數之意義》,臺北:臺灣商務印書,2005年。

洪修平,《中國禪學思想史》,臺北:文津出版,1994年。

許穎,《沂現代禪淨合流研究》,四川:巴蜀出版,2010年。

陳揚炯,《中國淨土宗涌史》,江蘇:古籍出版,2002年。

陳劍鍠,《圓通證道——印光的淨土啟化》,臺北:東大出版, 2002年。

麻天祥,《中國禪宗思想發展史》,武漢:武漢大學出版社,2007 年。

劉果宗,《禪宗思想史概說》,文津出版,2001年。

劉貴傑,《禪宗哲學》,臺北:臺灣商務印書館,2013年。

釋印光,《印光大師全集》,臺北:福峰圖書,1999年。

釋印光,《印光法師文鈔三編》上冊,嘉義:弘達印刷出版,2002 年。

釋聖嚴,《聖嚴法師教淨土法門》,臺北:法鼓文化,2010年。

釋聖嚴,《聖嚴法師教話頭禪》,臺北:法鼓文化,2009年。

釋聖嚴,《禪修菁華集⑤:默昭》,臺北:法鼓文化,1998年。

釋聖嚴,《觀音妙智:觀世音菩薩耳根圓通法門講要》,臺北:法 鼓文化,2010年。

五、辭典・參考書

《中文大辭典》,臺北:中華學術院,1973年。

・324・聖嚴研究・数数念佛禪法之研究・325・

《正中形音義綜合大字典》,臺北:正中書局,1974年。

《中華百科全書》第1卷,臺北:中華學術院,1981年。

《中國大百科全書》,《數學》,臺北;錦繡出版,1995年。

六、網路電子版

《中華電子佛典》光碟版,臺北:中華電子佛典協會,2010年。

《法鼓全集》網路版,臺北:法鼓山文教基金會,2005年。

《佛光大辭典》光碟版二版,臺北:佛光文化,2000年。

《文淵閣四庫全書》電子版,香港:迪志文化,2002年。

A Study on the Chan Method of Counting and Reciting the Buddha's Name:

Centered on Master Sheng-Yen's teaching

Guo-Jing Shi

Director, Chung-Hwa Institute of Buddhist Studies Associate Professor, Dharma Drum Institute of Liberal Arts Director, Chan Research and Practice Center

Abstract

Among the chan methods taught by Master Sheng-Yen, there is the method of "counting and reciting the buddha's name" which is often used to countervail problems like "breath-counting turning out breath-control" or "following-the-breath turning out drowsiness and scatter-brained". Such method is similar to the method of "counting the Buddha-name recitation ten times", a method promoted by Venerable Yin-Kuang, an eminent monk in a period from late Qing dynasty to early Republican era in Chinese history. Venerable Yin-Kuang apprehended that "the mind is very difficult to handle", and after trials of applying such method, he was amazed by its refined effects. This article will center on the method of counting and reciting the buddha's name, in order to investigate it through a variety of perspectives.

The author first explores origins of the concept of "number", the meanings in Chinese and Hindu cultures, and the substance in numerals and numeration. The effort is to reveal that "counting" possesses the powers of "continuously circling", "one is ten", "vacancy", and "wisdom", by which the Consciousness of

Numeration presented in Alaya Vijnana could be transformed into the Great Perfect Mirror Wisdom. In the end, it could lead to seeing the nature and attaining Buddhahood.

Furthermore, the exploration advances to why and how Master Sheng-Yen combined "counting" and "Buddha-name recitation" as the method of "counting and reciting the buddha's name", along with the nature and the fulfilling approaches of such practice. In addition, "Xuan-Shi" Lineage, branching from the fifth patriarch Hung-Ren in Chan School, once promoted Buddha-name recitation in Chan practice. Is this connected to the method of counting and reciting the buddha's name? What's the difference between the method of counting and reciting the buddha's name as well as the traditional method of Buddha-name recitation? What are the similarities and differences among methods of counting and reciting the buddha's name promoted by Masters Zun-Shi, Yin-Kuang, and Sheng-Yen? After dealing with these questions, the article then explores how Master Sheng-Yen, while teaching Hua-Tao and Silent Illumination, introduced the method of counting and reciting the buddha's name to lead to Chan-investigation and silent illumination? What is the theoretical framework and practical application in such connection?

Overall, this article aims at not only a thorough exploration of the Chan method of counting and reciting the buddha's name, but also the development of a new perspective on the idea that "Buddha-name recitation is in itself Chan investigation and Silent Illumination."

Key words: Master Sheng-Yen, numeral counting, counting and reciting the buddha's name, Hua-Tao Chan, Silent Illumination Chan

聖嚴研究第七輯

Studies of Master Sheng Yen Vol.7

編者 聖嚴教育基金會學術研究部

出版 法鼓文化

主編 楊蓓

封面設計 黄聖文

地址 臺北市北投區公館路186號5樓

網址 http://www.ddc.com.tw

E-mail market@ddc.com.tw

讀者服務專線 (02)2896-1600

初版一刷 2016年1月

建議售價 新臺幣320元 郵撥帳號 50013371

戶名 財團法人法鼓山文教基金會一法鼓文化.

北美經銷處 紐約東初禪寺

Chan Meditation Center (New York, USA)

Tel: (718)592-6593 Fax: (718)592-0717

以法鼓文化

本書如有缺頁、破損、裝訂錯誤,請寄回本社調換。 版權所有,請勿翻印。

國家圖書館出版品預行編目資料

聖嚴研究. 第七輯/聖嚴教育基金會學術研究部

編. -- 初版. -- 臺北市: 法鼓文化, 2016. 01

面: 公分

ISBN 978-957-598-693-3(平裝)

1.釋聖嚴 2.學術思想 3.佛教哲學 4.文集

220.9208 104027253